

HUGO'S SIMPLIFIED SYSTEM.

FRENCH GRAMMAR SIMPLIFIED.

AN EASY & RAPID SELF-INSTRUCTOR.

**EXERCISES AND VOCABULARIES ;
with the
PRONUNCIATION OF EVERY WORD
EXACTLY IMITATED.**

"STANDARD EDITION."

Revised and entirely re-written.
All rights reserved.

PUBLISHED BY
HUGO'S LANGUAGE INSTITUTE,
LONDON, ENGLAND.
1923

PREFACE.

The present "STANDARD" EDITION has been entirely re-written, and is practically a new work, in which the special advantages which made former editions so popular have been carefully preserved.

HUGO'S books are written throughout FROM THE LEARNER'S POINT OF VIEW. Most others are compiled chiefly for teachers, and contain technical explanations quite unintelligible to the average student. HUGO'S Grammars are simple and concise, but complete, inasmuch as they contain every rule a foreigner need know. Their contents do not correspond merely with the early lessons in the larger and more expensive text-books. Hugo's Grammars contain the GIST OF THE WHOLE, the careful way in which the matter is condensed, as well as simplified, being their chief advantage.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

Many teachers who admit HUGO'S to be the best system have objected to using it, on account of the ease with which the KEY could formerly be obtained. To meet this difficulty, the Key to the Additional Exercises is now only obtainable by teachers.

The Additional Exercises given on each right-hand page are simply intended as EXTRA PRACTICE for school pupils, who as a rule are not anxious to learn, and therefore can only be taught by constant repetition. No fresh words or rules are introduced in these exercises, so that adult students, who usually want to learn for their own sakes, are recommended to confine themselves to the left-hand pages.

THE KEY TO THE ADDITIONAL EXERCISES
is supplied DIRECT to *bonâ fide* teachers at 1s. 6d. per copy

CONTENTS.

ARTICLES :—	PAGE.		PAGE.
Indefinite	4	Conditional of all Verbs ...	60
Definite	4, 6, 18, 20	Past Definite of all Verbs ...	71
Partitive	22, 52	Imperfect	64
NOUNS :—		Imperative... ..	58, 111
Plural of	6, 8, 115	Compound Tenses... ..	46, 100
Possessive Case	12, 75	Irregular ER Verbs ...	106
Questions where the Subject		Irregular Verbs ...	119, 120
is a Noun	16, 28	Present Participle... ..	70
-ci and -là added... ..	75	Interrogative	8, 28, 48
ADJECTIVES :—		Negative	10, 16, 30, 44, 86
QUALIFYING. Formation of		Progressive Form	28
the Feminine	14, 52, 94	Impersonal Verbs... ..	107
Irregular Feminine 52, 95, 115, 118		Past Participle	32, 36, 44, 48
Plural	14, 96, 115	" " with être 36, 96, 100	
Place of	36, 52	" " Agreement of 62, 96	
Comparative, Superlative 54, 109		Subjunctive	110 to 114
Possessive	6, 10	'Past' translated by 'Perfect' 18	
Demonstrative	12, 75	Reflective Verbs	98, 100, 102
Indefinite	22, 52, 86, 90, 92	TO after a Verb	103
Interrogative	12, 58	how to translate SHALL & WILL 99	
NUMERAL ADJECTIVES—		ADVERBS :—	
Cardinal 27, 31, 37, 39, 45, 47, 49, 53		Formation of	82, 109, 118
Ordinal	55	Adverbs of Quantity	83
PRONOUNS :—		Place of Adverbs	84
PERSONAL PRONOUNS—		Adverbs of Negation	91
20, 38, 40, 46, 72, 84, 86		there (y)	88
of it, to it	88	Comparison of	54, 109
it, they, ce	72	PREPOSITIONS :—	
Disjunctive	79	Usual Prepositions	32
RELATIVE PRONOUNS 60, 62, 66, 78		chez	104
POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS ... 34, 80		IN after a Superlative	54
INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS		TO, AT, IN	104
30, 34, 108		Place of Prepositions 34, 107	
DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS		Infinitive after a Preposition 70	
70, 72, 75		CONJUNCTIONS : ... 112	
INDEFINITE PRONOUNS		MISCELLANEOUS :—	
86, 88, 90, 109		Alphabet	1
VERBS :—		Pronunciation	1—3
FULL CONJUGATION of avoir,		Days of the Week	27
être, and Regular Verbs 116, 117		Names of the Months	33
avoir } ... 6, 8, 14, 56, 58, 64, 71		How to express the time 33, 41, 43	
être }		Idiomatic Expressions with	
être with ce	72, 79	avoir in French (TO BE	
er Verbs	26, 28, 30, 32, 36	in English)	59, 61, 63
re Verbs	42, 44	YES after Negations	23, 45
ir Verbs	46, 48	Elision of e in words where	
Future of all Verbs	56	e is the only vowel	26

Students should start learning at the **FIRST LESSON**, on page 4. Pages 1, 2 and 3 are intended **FOR REFERENCE ONLY**.

THE FRENCH ALPHABET ;

with the names of the 26 letters. (K and W do not occur in real French words, and are sometimes omitted from the Alphabet.)

A ah	B beh	C seh	D deh	E eh	F eff	G sheh*	H ahsh	I ee	J shec*
K kah	L ell	M emm	N enn	O o	P peh	Q ki, kee	R airr	S ess	
	T teh	U ü, EE†	V veh	W dooohl-veh	X iks	Y ee-greck	Z zaid		

*sh to be sounded like the s in 'measure.' †ü, EE, like ee with rounded lips.

GENERAL RULES ON PRONUNCIATION.

(for fuller explanation, see "French Pronunciation Simplified")

CONSONANTS (i.e. all letters except a, e, i, o, u, y) are pronounced as in English, except the following :

c before e, i, y, sounds like s ; otherwise like k.	h is generally silent.
ç (ç cedilla) always sounds like s.	j always sounds like s in MEASURE.
g before e, i, y, sounds like the s in MEASURE ; otherwise like g in GO.	s between two vowels sounds like z.
	r is stronger than in English.
	ch = sh, qu = k, th = t.

Important Rule.—**CONSONANTS** are not pronounced when the last letter of a word, except **c, f, l, r**, which are pronounced.

French words are divided into **SYLLABLES** by the following general rule : Finish with a **VOWEL**, and commence with a **CONSONANT**. Two Consonants are divided, but if the second is **l** or **r**, both belong to the next syllable.

PRONUNCIATION OF VOWELS.

(The Stress in French is very slight, and is usually placed on the last syllable.)

a like ah , but very short ; as, 1. a par cas fatal chacal has by case fatal jackal (for Pronunciation see below)	e at the end of a syllable like u in 'fur' ; as, 3. je cela cheval matelas I that horse mattress
e in the middle of a syllable like ai ; as, 2. mer fer sel merci sea iron salt mercy	e is mute at the end of a word of more than one syllable : 4. tasse place malade saïne cup place ill hal

IMITATED PRONUNCIATION.

(r in italics not to be pronounced ; sh in thick type like s in MEASURE ; Vowels before double Consonants to be pronounced short ; ah very short.)

PRON.—1. ah, pähr, käh, fäh-tähl, shäh-kühl ; 2. mair, fair, sell, mair-see ; 3. sher, ser-läh, sher-vähll, mäh-ter-läh ; 4. tähss, plähss, mäh-lähdd, sähl.

é (acute accent) like the interjection *eh*! as,

5. *été répété café thé blé*
been repeated coffee tea corn

è (grave accent) and ê (circumflex* accent) like *ay*; as,

6. *père frère élève rêve*
father brother pupil dream

i (or y) like *ee* if long, and like *i* in 'ill' if short; as,

7. *il ami vide syllabe lit*
he friend empty syllable bed

o somewhat like *o* in 'not'; as,

8. *bottine dormir chose rose*
boot (to) sleep thing rose

u like *ee* pronounced with rounded lips; as,

9. *reçu sur rue dur futur*
received on street hard future

ai, ei like *ay*; as,

10. *mais paire reine haleine*
but pair queen breath

au, eau like *oh*; as,

11. *chaud mauvais cadeau*
warm bad present

eu, œu like *u* in 'fur'; as,

12. *neuf heure œuf sœur*
nine hour egg sister

oi like *wah* or *o'ah* short:

13. *loi roi mois boire*
law king month (to) drink

ou like *oo*; as,

14. *ou roue couteau mouche*
or wheel knife fly

* The CIRCUMFLEX ACCENT lengthens the sound; Vowels are otherwise generally short. The GRAVE ACCENT is used to distinguish between words spelt alike (*la*, the; *là*, there), and only alters the pronunciation of *e*.

5. *eh-teh*, † *reh-peh-teh*, *käh-feh*, *teh*, *bleh*; 6. *pair*, *frair*, *eh-laiv*, *raiv*; 7. *ill*, *äh-me*, *veed*, *sil-ähb*, *lee*; 8. *bot-cen*, *dor-meer*, *shohz*, *roh-z*; 9. *rer-se*, *seer*, *re*, *deer*, *fe-teer*; 10. *may*, *pair*, *rain*, *ah-lain*; 11. *shoh*, *moh-vay*, *käh-doh*; 12. *nerf*, *er*, *erf*, *ser*; 13. *lo'äh*, *ro'äh*, *mo'äh*, *bo'ähr*; 14. *oo*, *roo*, *koo-toh*, *moosh*.

† In the Imitated Pronunciation, the sound of *é* is indicated by *eh*, and that of *è* by *ai* or *ay*, though in English *eh* and *ay* have practically the same sound.

NASAL SOUNDS.

Any vowel before *m* or *n* is pronounced nasally, thus:

o before *m* or *n* = ong in 'song'
(therefore *om*, *on* sound alike):

1. *long plomb non nom*
long lead no name

u before *m* or *n* = ung in 'lung'
(therefore *um*, *un* sound alike):

2. *parfum un humble brun*
perfume one humble brown

a or e before *m* or *n* = alng,
similar to *au* in 'aunt'; as,
(*am*, *an*, *em*, *en* sound alike)

3. *dans enfant temps champ*
in child time field

i before *m* or *n* = ang in 'sang'
(*im*, *in* sound alike); as,

4. *impôt fin vin simple*
tax end wine simple

The nasal sound of *i* is always used if there is an *i* or a *y* in the syllable; therefore *im*, *in*, *ym*, *yn*, *aim*, *ain*, *eim*, *ein* are all pronounced alike.

At the end of a syllable, *ien* is pronounced as if spelt *i-in*; as,

5. *faim main teint nymphe bien chien*
hunger hand complexion nymph well dog

PRONUNCIATION *ng* in italics must NOT be pronounced ; it merely indicates that the preceding vowel is nasal : 1. *long, plong, nong, nong* ; 2. *pahr-fung, ung, ung-bl, brung* ; 3. *dahng, ahng-fahng, tahng, shahng* ; 4. *ang-poh, fang, vang, sang-pl* ; 5. *fang, mang, tang, nangf, be-ang, she-ang*.

NOTE.—There is no nasal sound if *m* or *n* is followed by a vowel, or if there are two *m*'s or two *n*'s ; as,

inutile (PRON. ee-ne-teel) ; *une* (In) ; *bonne* (bonn) ; *homme* (omm)

LIQUID SOUNDS.

ill and *il*, if liquid=*ee-e*.

il is only liquid if at the end of words, and following a vowel ; as,

1. *travail* *fautueil* *soleil*
work armchair sun

ill is always liquid except in words commencing with *ill*, *mill*, or *vill* ; as,

2. *billet* *brouillard* *famille*
ticket fog family

gn=*ni* in 'companion' ; *gne* if final sounds similar to *ing* ; as,

3. *signal* *agneau* *campagne*
signal lamb country

The above is the general pronunciation, but many natives pronounce *il* or *ill* like *ill-ye*r, and final *gne* like *n'ye*r.

PRONUNCIATION.—1. *trāh-vah'e, foh-ter'e, so-lay'e* ; 2. *bee-yay, broo'e-yahr, fāh-mee-ye* ; 3. *seen-yāhl, āhn-yoh, kahng-pāh'ing* or *kahng-pahn-ye*r.

IMPORTANT REMARKS.

er at the end of words of more than one syllable = *é* (eh) ; as,

1. *parler* *donner* *fumer*
(to) speak (to) give to smoke

ez final sounds like *é* (eh) ; as,

2. *nez* *fermez* *commencez*
nose shut commence

y between two vowels is equal to *i-i* or *i-y* ; as,

3. *royal*=*roi-ial* *payer*=*pai-ier*
royal (to) pay

ti unless beginning a word is usually pronounced *si*, especially if between two vowels ; as,

4. *diplomatie* *révolution*
diplomacy revolution

But in the terminations *stion*, *xtion*, *tié*, *tier*, *tière*, *tième*, the *t* is pronounced as in English ; as,

5. *question* *amitié* *litière*
question friendship litter

PRONUNCIATION.—1. *pāhr-leh, donn-eh, fē-meh* ; 2. *neh, fair-meh, komm-ahng-seh* ; 3. *ro'ah-yāhl, pay-yeh* ; 4. *de-plo-māh-se, reh-vo-le-se-ong* ; 5. *kess-te-ong, h-mee-te-eh, lee-te-air*.

If a word beginning with a vowel or an *h* mute follows a final Consonant, this consonant (even if otherwise mute) is joined to the second word, **WHENEVER NO PAUSE COULD BE MADE BETWEEN THE TWO WORDS**. When thus linked to the following word, *s* and *x* sound like *z*, *d* like *t*, and *f* like *v* ; as,

1. *vous êtes* *ont-ils* ? *deux hommes* *vend-il* ? *pas enco*r*é*
you are have they ? two men does he sell ? not yet

PRON.—1. *vo*o *z'ate*, *ong-t'ill* ? *der* *z'omm*, *vahng-t'ill* ? *pah* *z'ahng-kor*.

FIRST LESSON.

1. A (or AN) is translated { **un** before a Masculine Noun;
 une „ Feminine Noun.

IMITATED PRONUNCIATION.—*ung*, Inn or EEN (with rounded lips).

1. a soldier, **un** *soldat*

2. a lady, **une** *dame*

3. a friend, **un** *ami*

4. an aunt, **une** *tante*

5. an hotel, ***un** *hôtel**

6. a church, ***une** *église**

PRONUNCIATION (see foot-note).—1 *ung* soll-däh, 2 Inn dähmm (äh very short), 3 *ung* n'äh-me, 4 Inn tahngt, 5 *ung* n'oh-tell, 6 Inn ch-gleez.

EXERCISE I.

The small numbers refer to the translation and pronunciation below.

1. a brother¹; 2. a sister²; 3. a soldier³; 4. an aunt³; 5. a day⁴; 6. a door⁵; 7. an hotel³; 8. a church³; 9. a friend.³

1 frère, 2 sœur, 3 see Examples, 4 jour (masculine), 5 porte (feminine).

PRON.—1 frair, 2 ser, 4 shoohr (*sh* like *s* in 'measure'), 5 port.

*Names of things are MASCULINE in French, except those ending in *e*, most of which are FEMININE (those ending in *té*, *eur*, *ion*, *son*, are also Feminine).

2. THE is translated { **le** before a Masculine Singular Noun;
 la „ Feminine Singular Noun.

PRON.—*ler*, läh (äh always very short).

1. the soldier, **le** *soldat*

2. the lady, **la** *dame*

3. the day, **le** *jour*

4. the door, **la** *porte*

3. **l'** is used instead of **le** or **la** before a vowel or *H* mute (all *H*'s are mute unless we indicate the contrary); as,

1. the friend, **l'***ami*

2. the church, **l'***église*

3. the man, **l'***homme*

4. the hour, **l'***heure*

PRON.—1 läh-me, 2 leh-gleez, 3 lomm, 4 ler.

EXERCISE II.

1. the paper¹; 2. the door; 3. the uncle³; 4. the church;
 5. the table³; 6. the bag⁴; 7. the address⁵; 8. the day;
 9. the hour⁶; 10. the hotel; 11. the soldier; 12. the friend.

1 papier (masc.), 2 oncle, 3 table (fem.), 4 sac (m.), 5 adresse (f.), 6 heure (f.).

PRON.—1 päh-pe-eh, 2 ong-kl, 3 tah-bl, 4 sähck, 5 äh-dress, 6 er.

In French words, the last vowel pronounced is usually stressed very slightly, but beginners should pronounce all syllables with equal emphasis. For explanation of italics, etc., in Imitated Pronunciation, see pages 1 to 3.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Où ¹ est ² l'église ?	Where is the church ?
L'église est là. ³	The church is there.
Qui ⁴ est à ⁵ la porte ?	Who is at the door ?
Un homme est à ⁵ la porte.	A man is at the door.
Qui a ⁶ le papier ?	Who has the paper ?
Le frère a le papier.	The brother has the paper.
Où est la porte ?	Where is the door ?
La porte est ici. ⁷	The door is here.
Qui est la dame ?	Who is the lady ?
L'oncle a un ami.	The uncle has a friend.
Où est le soldat ?	Where is the soldier ?
La tante a un sac.	The aunt has a bag.

IMITATED PRONUNCIATION.

1 oo ; 2 ay ; 3 lāh ; 4 kee ; 5 āh ; 6 āh (āh always very short) ; 7 iss-e.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES

These Additional Exercises are specially intended for School use, the Key being supplied to Teachers only.

Students desirous of quickly acquiring a general knowledge of French may omit them altogether, as they contain no new rules.

1.

1. L'oncle a (has) un ami. 2. L'église a (has) une porte.
3. La dame a une sœur. 4. La tante a le sac. 5. Le soldat
a l'adresse. 6. La tante a un frère. 7. L'homme a un oncle.

2.

1. an uncle ; 2. a lady ; 3. a day ; 4. a church ; 5. the
brother ; 6. the sister ; 7. the bag ; 8. the door ; 9. the friend ;
10. the hotel ; 11. the church ; 12. the hour.

3.

1. the soldier ; 2. an aunt ; 3. the address ; 4. a man ; 5. the
table ; 6. a church ; 7. the hotel ; 8. a bag ; 9. the day ; 10. the
door ; 11. the paper ; 12. the friend.

4.

1. The hotel has¹ a door. 2. The brother has the bag.
3. The sister has the paper. 4. The man has a table. 5. The
lady has the address. 6. The soldier has an uncle.

F.G.—I*

1 has, a (pronounced āh).

4. THE must always be translated les if followed by a Plural.(The **s** which is added to form the Plural of Nouns is not sounded).1. the sisters, **les sœurs**2. the friends, **les amis**3. the men, **les hommes**4. the days, **les jours**5. the churches, **les églises**6. the hours, **les heures**PRON.—1 lay **ser**, 2 lay z'äh-mé, 3 lay z'omm, 4 lay shoohr (sh like **s** in 'measure'), 5 lay z'eh-gleez, 6 lay z'er.**EXERCISE III.**1. the papers ; 2. the uncles ; 3. the tables ; 4 the bags ;
5. the hotels ; 6. the addresses ; 7. the soldiers ; 8. the hours.**5. Present Tense of (TO) HAVE, avoir**1st person I have **j'ai**2nd „ thou hast **tu as**3rd „ he has **il a**3rd „ she has **elle a**we have **nous avons**you have **vous avez**they (m.) have **ils ont**they (f.) have **elles ont**PRON.—shch (sh always like **s** in 'measure'), tée äh, ill äh, ell äh ; noo z'äh-vong, voo z'äh-veh, ill z'ong, ell z'ong.The Third Person (HAS, **a**, or HAVE, **ont**) must be used after a Noun ; as,
the man has, **l'homme a** ; the men have, **les hommes ont****EXERCISE IV.**1. He has bought¹ a house.² 2. We have found³ two⁴ bags.
3. They (fem.) have received⁵ a letter.⁶ 4. The brother and⁷ the
sister have bought¹ an hotel. 5. I have received⁶ two⁴ parcels.⁸
6. You have found³ the addresses. 7. She has a chair.⁹1 acheté, 2 maison (fem.), 3 trouvé, 4 deux, 5 reçu, 6 lettre (fem.),
7 et, 8 paquet (masc.), 9 chaise (fem.). PRON.—1 ähsh-teh, 2 may-zong,
3 troo-veh, 4 der, 5 rer-see, 6 lettr, 7 eh, 8 päh-kay, 9 shaze.**6. OUR, notre, Plural : nos ; YOUR, votre, Plural : vos ;
THEIR, leur, Plural : leurs.**

The Plural form must be used if the following Noun is in the Plural.

PRON.—notr, noh ; votr, voh ; ler, ler.

our brother, **notre frère**your sister, **votre sœur**their uncle, **leur oncle**our brothers, **nos frères**your sisters, **vos sœurs**their uncles, **leurs oncles****EXERCISE V.**1. from¹ our door ; 2. to² your hotels ; 3. the doors of¹ the
church ; 4. at² their table ; 5. from your house³ to our garden⁴ ;
6. at their church ; 7. of our chairs ; 8. of their friends.

1 of or from, de, 2 to or at, à, 3 maison (fem.), 4 jardin (masc.).

PRON.—1 der, 2 äh (very short), 3 may-zong, 4 shahr-dang.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Où est votre maison ?	Where is your house ?
Notre maison est là (ici).	Our house is there (here).
Qui a trouvé les papiers ?	Who has found the papers ?
J'ai trouvé les papiers.	I have found the papers.
Qui a reçu les lettres ?	Who has received the letters ?
Ils ont reçu les paquets et ¹ les lettres.	They have received the parcels and the letters.
Notre oncle a acheté une maison et ¹ un jardin.	Our uncle has bought a house and a garden.
Elle a trouvé les lettres.	She has found the letters.

PRON.—1. *ch.* The *t* of *ET* is never pronounced, even if a Vowel follows.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES (Optional, see remarks on page 5).

5.

1. Il a reçu votre lettre. 2. Nous avons trouvé les adresses.
3. Ils ont acheté les papiers. 4. L'église a deux portes. 5. La dame a trois frères. 6. Leurs frères ont acheté un hôtel. 7. Votre sœur a reçu le paquet. 8. Notre oncle a trouvé les hommes.

6.

1. the soldiers and the friends ; 2. the ladies and the men ; 3. the churches and the doors ; 4. the hours and the days ; 5. the hotels.

1. our uncles ; 2. your aunt ; 3. their brothers and their sisters ;
4. our house ; 5. your parcels ; 6. their garden ; 7. our friends.

7.

1. from the church to our hotel ; 2. the garden of your house ;
3. at their church ; 4. to your papers ; 5. from our friends.

8.

1. nous avons ; 2. elle a ; 3. ils ont ; 4. j'ai ; 5. tu as ;
6. elles ont ; 7. il a ; 8. vous avez.

1. he has ; 2. they (fem.) have ; 3. we have ; 4. thou hast ; 5. they have ; 6. she has ; 7. you have ; 8. I have.

9.

1. He has two houses. 2. You have an hotel. 3. They (fem.) have the paper. 4. I have one brother and two sisters. 5. We have the address. 6. The church has two doors.

10.

1. I have bought an hotel. 2. We have received your parcels.
3. She has found the bag. 4. You have received two letters.
5. They have bought our house. 6. He has found their addresses.

SECOND LESSON.

7. The Plural of most French Nouns is formed by adding **s** to the Singular, as in English (see Rule 4). This **s** is not pronounced.

The following additional Rules apply to comparatively few words.

- (a) Words ending in **s**, **x**, **z**, do not change in the Plural ; as,

1. a month, un mois	two months, deux mois
2. a price, un prix	two prices, deux prix
3. the nose, le nez	the noses, les nez

- (b) Words ending in **au** or **eu** add **x** in the Plural ; as,

4. a hat, un chapeau	two hats, deux chapeaux
5. a nephew, un neveu	two nephews, deux neveux

- (c) Words ending in **al** change **al** into **aux** ; as,

6. a horse, un cheval	two horses, deux chevaux
------------------------------	---------------------------------

PRON.—1 *ung* mo'äh, *der* mo'äh, 2 *ung* pree, *der* pree, 3 *ler* neh, *lay* neh.
4 *ung* shäh-poh, *der* shäh-poh, 5 *ung* ner-ver, *der* ner-ver, 6 *ung* sher-vähll, *der* sher-voh.

EXERCISE I.

1. a knife,¹ the knives ; 2. one (=an) arm,² two arms ;
3. the journal,³ the journals ; 4. the voice,⁴ the voices ; 5. the fire,⁵ the fires ; 6. one (=a) son,⁶ three⁷ sons.

1 *couteau* (masc.), 2 *bras* (masc.), 3 *journal* (masc.), 4 *voix* (fem.)
(exception to rule). 5 *feu* (masc.), 6 *fil* (pronounced : fiss), 7 *trois*.

PRON.—1 *koo-toh*, 2 *brah*, 3 *shoohr-nähll*, 4 *vo'äh*, 5 *fer*, 6 *fiss*, 7 *tro'äh*.

8. The INTERROGATIVE (Question) of **j'ai**, etc., is formed as in English ; but a hyphen (-) is placed between the verb and pronoun, and in the third person singular a **t** between two hyphens (-t-), thus :

have I ? **ai-je** ? hast thou ? **as-tu** ? has he ? **a-t-il** ? has she ? **a-t-elle** ?

have we ? **avons-nous** ? have you ? **avez-vous** ?

have they (masc.) ? **ont-ils** ? have they (fem.) ? **ont-elles** ?

PRON.—*aysh*, *äh tü*, *äh-til*, *äh-tel*, *äh-vong* *noo*, *äh-vay* *voo*, *ong-t'il*, *ong-t'el*.

EXERCISE II.

1. Have I seen¹ your nephews ? 2. Have they sent² a letter ? 3. Have you written³ the address ? 4. Have we received the journals ? 5. Has he seen the horses ? 6. Have they (fem.) written to their friends ? 7. They have two sons. 8. Have you seen your friends ? 9. Have they bought your house ? 10. Has she received the parcel ?

1 *vu*, 2 *envoyé*, 3 *écrit*. PRON. 1 *vee*, 2 *ahng-vo'äh-yeh*, 3 *eh-kree*.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Avez-vous vu notre ami ?	Have you seen our friend ?
Oui, ¹ j'ai vu votre ami.	Yes, I have seen your friend.
A-t-il acheté la maison ?	Has he bought the house ?
Non, ² il a acheté le jardin.	No, he has bought the garden.
Ont-ils reçu nos lettres ?	Have they received our letters ?
Oui, ils ont reçu deux lettres.	Yes, they have received two „
Qui a trouvé l'adresse ?	Who has found the address ?
Notre sœur a trouvé l'adresse.	Our sister has found the address.
Où avez-vous vu nos chevaux ?	Where have you seen our horses ?
J'ai vu vos chevaux là.	I have seen your horses there.
Leurs neveux sont ici.	Their nephews are here.

PRON.—1 *we or oo'e* ; 2 *nong*.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES (Optional, see remarks on page 5).

11.

1. Avons-nous les couteaux ? 2. A-t-elle votre adresse ?
3. Avez-vous un frère et deux sœurs ? 4. Ont-ils les chevaux ?
5. Ai-je votre chapeau ?

6. J'ai envoyé le paquet à votre tante. 7. A-t-il reçu une lettre ?
8. Avez-vous vu leurs neveux ? 9. Ils ont écrit à notre oncle.
10. Nous avons acheté les journaux.

12.

1. the arm, the arms ; 2. a newspaper,* three newspapers ; 3. our nephew, our nephews ; 4. your price, your prices ; 5. their son, their sons ; 6. one horse, three horses ; 7. the nose, the noses.

13.

1. a-t-il ? 2. avons-nous ? 3. ont-elles ? 4. ai-je ? 5. avez-vous ?
6. a-t-elle ? 7. ont-ils ? 8. as-tu ?

9. have I ? 10. have we ? 11. has she ? 12. have they (masc.) ?
13. hast thou ? 14. has he ? 15. have you ? 16. have they (fem.) ?

14.

1. Have I your knife ? 2. Has he the newspaper* ? 3. Have they three sons ?
4. Have you our papers ? 5. Has she their letter ?

15.

1. We have lost your letters. 2. Have you received our parcels ?
3. She has seen their nephews. 4. They have found our newspapers.*
5. Has he sent the horses ? 6. The lady has written to your uncle.

* newspaper or journal, journal (masc.)

9. MY, mon, ma, mes ; HIS, HER, ITS, son, sa, sés ;			
THY, ton, ta, tes. PRON. <i>mong, mäh, may, song, säh, say, tong, täh, tay.</i>			
mon, ton, son are used if the following Noun is MASCULINE SINGULAR.			
ma, ta, sa	"	"	" FEMININE SINGULAR.
mes, tes, ses	"	"	" PLURAL.
my brother, mon frère	my sister, ma sœur		
his (or her) sister, sa sœur	her (or his) brother, son frère		
my brothers, mes frères	his (or her) sisters, ses sœurs		

NOTE carefully that **son frère** means 'HER brother' as well as 'HIS brother,' and that **sa sœur** means 'HIS sister' as well as 'HER sister,' because these words always take the Gender of the FOLLOWING Noun.

EXERCISE III.

1. my niece¹ ; 2. his father² ; 3. my hat ; 4. her mother³ ;
5. my nephews ; 6. his nieces¹ ; 7. my room⁴ ; 8. his pen⁵ ;
9. her pen ; 10. her pencil⁶ ; 11. his pencil ; 12. her hats.

1 *nidce*, 2 *père*, 3 *mère*, 4 *chambre* (fem.), 5 *plume* (fem.), 6 *crayon* (masc.).

PRON.—1 *ne-ess*, 2 *pair*, 3 *mair*, 4 *shahng-br*, 5 *pleem*, 6 *kray-yong*.

- 10. mon, ton, son** are used before words beginning with a vowel or an H mute, even if the Noun is FEMININE ; as,
my friend (fem.), **mon amie** | her address, **son adresse**

- EX. IV.—1. her handwriting¹ ; 2. his school² ; 3. his room ;
4. her uncle ; 5. his street³ ; 6. his church ; 7. her church.

1 *écriture* (f.), 2 *école* (f.), 3 *rue* (f.). PRON. 1 *ch-kre-tee*, 2 *ch-kol*, 3 *ree*.

- 11. NOT** is translated by the two words **ne...pas**.

pas always occupies the same place in the sentence as the English word NOT, and **ne** (n' only before a vowel) always PRECEDES THE VERB ; thus,

I have not, je n'ai pas		have I not ? n'ai-je pas ?
thou hast not, tu n'as pas		hast thou not ? n'as-tu pas ?
he has not, il n'a pas		has he not ? n'a-t-il pas ?
we have not, nous n'avons pas		have we not ? n'avons-nous pas ?
you have not, vous n'avez pas		have you not ? n'avez-vous pas ?
they have not, ils n'ont pas		have they not ? n'ont-ils pas ?

PRON. *sher neh päh*, *tee näh päh*, *ill näh päh* ; *naysh päh* ? *näh tee päh* ? etc.

EXERCISE V.

1. Have you not my book¹ ? 2. He has not seen her handwriting. 3. We have not found the gloves.² 4. Have they not written to your friends ? 5. I have not read³ his letter.

1 *livre* (masc.), 2 *gant* (masc.), 3 *lu*. PRON. 1 *leevr*, 2 *gahng*, 3 *lee*.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Avez-vous reçu un paquet par la poste ¹ ?	Have you received a parcel by (the) post ?
Non, mais ² j'ai reçu deux lettres de Paris. ³	No, but I have received two letters from Paris.
N'a-t-il pas rencontré ⁴ sa nièce dans ⁵ la rue ? [chevaux ?	Has he not met his niece in the street ? [horses ?
N'avez-vous pas acheté les deux	Have you not bought the two
N'ont-ils pas trouvé mon parapluie ⁶ ?	Have they not found my umbrella ? [gloves ?
De qui a-t-elle reçu les gants ?	From whom has she received the
Elle n'a pas écrit à son père.	She has not written to her father.
N'avez-vous pas vu mes livres sur ⁷ la table ?	Have you not seen my books on the table ?

PRON.—1 *posst* ; 2 *may* ; 3 *pāh-re* ; 4 *rahng-kong-treh* ; 5 *dahng* ; 6 *pāh-rāh-plwe* (masculine,—exception to rule) ; 7 *seer*.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

16.

1. Qui a acheté leurs gants ? 2. N'avez-vous pas vu son école ? 3. Nous avons vu son crayon et sa plume.

4. N'a-t-il pas trouvé nos livres sur la table ? 5. Nous n'avons pas écrit les lettres. 6. N'ont-ils pas envoyé les livres, les crayons et les plumes dans mon paquet ?

17.

1. my father ; 2. my mother ; 3. his book ; 4. her room ; 5. his gloves ; 6. her pens ; 7. her father ; 8. his mother ; 9. her pencil ; 10. his pen ; 11. my books ; 12. her glove ; 13. his pens.

18.

1. il n'a pas ; 2. n'ai-je pas ? 3. nous n'avons pas ; 4. n'ont-ils pas ? 5. tu n'as pas ; 6. n'avez-vous pas ? 7. elles n'ont pas.

8. has he not ? 9. I have not ; 10. have we not ? 11. they have not ; 12. hast thou not ? 13. she has not ; 14. have you not ?

19.

1. from his house ; 2. to her address ; 3. of our street ; 4. at her school ; 5. from her father ; 6. to his mother.

20.

1. Has he not found my gloves ? 2. We have not received his letter. 3. Have you not seen my niece ? 4. My nephew has not bought the horses. 5. They (fem.) have not seen my handwriting.

THIRD LESSON.

12. WHICH ? WHAT ? WHAT A ! are all translated :

Sing. Masc. **quel**, Fem. **quelle** ; Plu. Masc. **quels**, Fem. **quelles**

PRONUNCIATION of all four forms ; kell.

which niece ? **quelle nièce** ? | which hats ? **quels chapeaux** ?

EXERCISE I.

1. which school ? 2. what month ? 3. which rooms ? 4. what a man ! 5. what hats ? 6. which hour ? 7. which parcels ?

13.

THIS	{	Masc. ce , Fem. cette ;	Plural	{	THESE	}	ces
THAT					THOSE		

PRON. ser, set, say.

THIS (or that) glove, **ce gant**

THAT (or this) street, **cette rue**

THESE (or those) gloves, **ces gants**

THOSE (or these) streets, **ces rues**

EXCEPTION.—**cet** is used instead of **ce** if the next word begins with a vowel or an H mute ; as,

this (or that) friend, **cet ami** | that (or this) man, **cet homme**

PRON. set äh-me, set onm **cet** is never used instead of **cette** or **ces**.

EXERCISE II.

1. this carriage¹ ; 2. that gun² ; 3. these knives ; 4. those forks³ ; 5. this inkstand⁴ ; 6. that handwriting ; 7. this hour ; 8. those days ; 9. this hotel ; 10. these gardens ; 11. this ink.⁵

1 voiture, f., 2 fusil. m. (L silent), 3 fourchette, f., 4 encrier, m., 5 encre, f.

PRON. 1 vo'äh-TEER, 2 FEE-ze, 3 foohr-shet, 4 ahng-kre-ch, 5 ahngkr.

14. Constructions like the following must be changed thus :

my father's hat *into* the hat of my father ; your sister's husband *into* the husband of your sister ; the girls' friends *into* the friends of the girls.

Begin with the word coming after the apostrophe ('), placing **THE** before it.

EXERCISE III.

1. my niece's husband¹ ; 2. the officer's² horse ; 3. these soldiers' guns ; 4. my sister's umbrella³ ; 5. which lady's carriage ? 6. those officers' horses ; 7. your friend's address.

8. Have you found this lady's umbrella ? 9. Her husband has written to his nephew's friend. 10. Their nieces have not read this lady's letter. 11. Our neighbour's⁴ windows.⁵

• 1 mari, 2 officier, 3 parapluie (maso.), 4 voisin, 5 fenêtre (fem.).

PRON. 1 mäh-re, 2 off-iss-e-ch, 3 päh-räh-plwe, 4 vo'äh-zang, 5 fer-nay-tr.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Où est la voiture de votre père ?	Where is your father's carriage ?
Elle est là (ici).	It (=she) is there (here). [stand ?]
Quel est le prix ¹ de cet encrier ?	What is the price of this ink-
Qui est cet homme ?	Who is that man ?
N'avez-vous pas lu ² ce livre ?	Have you not read this book ?
Quel est votre chapeau ? [dame.	Which is your hat ? [writing.
Je n'ai pas vu l'écriture de cette	I have not seen that lady's hand-
Elle a envoyé son fils ³ à l'hôtel.	She has sent her son to the hotel.
Avez-vous trouvé l'adresse de	Have you found that man's
cet homme ?	address ?

PRON.—1 *pre* ; 2 *lee* ; 3 *fiss*.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

21.

1. Avez-vous vu la voiture de son mari ? 2. J'ai acheté ce couteau et cette fourchette. 3. Quel livre a-t-il écrit ? 4. Qui a vu les gants de ces dames ?

5. Le cheval de l'officier est à la porte. 6. Quel est le fusil de ce soldat ? 7. Ils n'ont pas trouvé le parapluie de votre nièce. 8. N'avez-vous pas reçu les lettres de votre frère ?

22.

1. which school ? 2. what hat ? 3. what a carriage ! 4. which knives ? 5. what forks ? 6. what a fire ! 7. what street ? 8. which houses ? 9. what a handwriting !

23.

1. the officer's gloves ; 2. the man's bag ; 3. your brother's niece ; 4. these soldiers' guns ; 5. our uncle's carriage ; 6. your friend's knife ; 7. those men's papers ; 8. his sister's address ; 9. our nieces' house ; 10. my nephew's voice.

24.

1. this soldier ; 2. that lady ; 3. this man ; 4. these horses ; 5. those rooms ; 6. this handwriting ; 7. that officer ; 8. these newspapers ; 9. those streets ; 10. that voice ; 11. those letters.

25.

1. Which day ? 2. Your nephew's friend. 3. Have you sent the man's books ? 4. He has bought his uncle's garden. 5. They have bought these hats. 6. Has she written this letter ? 7. We have received that parcel. 8. Have you seen those houses ? 9. We have written to that man. 10. Have you sent those addresses ?

15. Present Tense of (TO) BE, *être*

I am	je suis	we are	nous sommes
thou art	tu es	you are	vous êtes
he is	il est	they (m.) are	ils sont
she is	elle est	they (f.) are	elles sont

PRON. (*sh* like *s* in 'measure') *sher* swe, *tee* ay, *ill* ay; *noo* somm, *voo* z'ate, *ill* song, *ell* song.

The Third Person (**ARE, sont**) must be used after a Noun; as,
The soldiers **ARE** in the street. Les soldats **sont** dans la rue.

EXERCISE IV.

1. Who¹ is there²? 2. Where³ are our knives? 3. I am very⁴ tired.⁵ 4. He is very rich.⁶ 5. She is at (the) church. 6. We are at his hotel. 7. You are late (=in⁷ delay⁷). 8. The inkstand is on the table. 9. Who are these men? 10. Where are our newspapers (=journals)? 11. Your friends are at the station.⁸

I qui, 2 là, 3 où, 4 très, 5 fatigué, 6 riche, 7 en retard, 8 gare (fem.).
FRON. 1 kee, 2 lah, 3 oo, 4 tray, 5 fäh-te-gay, 6 rish, 7 ahng rer-tahr, 8 gahr.

16. Adjectives form the Feminine by adding *e* (those ending in *e* do not change). *s* is generally added in the Plural (see Rule 7).

	MASCULINE.			FEMININE.	
	Singular.	Plural.		Singular.	Plural.
RIGHT	droit	droits		droite	droites
LEFT	gauche	gauches		gauche	gauches
LARGE	grand	grands		grande	grandes
SMALL	petit	petits		petite	petites

PRON. -- Masculine: *dro'äh*, *gohsh*, *grahng*, *per-te*.
Feminine: *dro'äht*, *gohsh*, *grahngd*, *per-teet*.

17. Adjectives take the Gender and Number of the word to which they refer, as:

The man is tall (=large).	L'homme est grand.
The lady is tall.	La dame est grande.
The men are tall.	Les hommes sont grands.
The ladies are tall.	Les dames sont grandes.

EXERCISE V.

1. Our friends are absent.¹ 2. These men are rich. 3. His house is too² small.³ 4. We are tired. 5. This water⁴ is warm.⁵ 6. That ink is bad.⁶ 7. You are very polite.⁷ 8. I am ill.⁸ 9. Her hat is too small. 10. My gloves are too large.

1 absent, 2 trop, 3 petit, 4 eau (fem.), 5 chaud, 6 mauvais, 7 poli, 8 malade.
PRON. 1 äh-b-sahng, 2 tro, 3 per-te, 4 oh, 5 shoh, 6 moh-vay, 7 po-le, 8 mäh-lähd.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

N'êtes-vous pas malade ?	Are you not ill ?
Non, mais je suis très fatigué.	No, but I am very tired.
Cette eau est très mauvaise.	This water is very bad.
Est-elle grande ou petite ?	Is she tall or short ?
Elle est assez ¹ grande.	She is rather (=enough) tall.
Ne sont-ils pas en retard ?	Are they not late ? [friends ?
Où sont les amis de votre neveu ?	Where are your nephew's
Ils sont absents.	They are absent.
Avez-vous un verre ² d'eau ?	Have you a glass of water ?
Oui, mais elle est trop froide. ³	Yes, but it (=she) is too cold.
Ces chambres sont trop chaudes.	These rooms are too warm.

PRON.—1 ähss-eh ; 2 vair ; 3 fro'ähd.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

26.

1. Vous (plur.) êtes très fatigués. 2. Ce couteau est trop mauvais. 3. Ces officiers sont très polis. 4. Ces chambres sont chaudes. 5. La maison de votre ami est petite.

6. Ces soldats sont très grands. 7. Sa mère est très riche. 8. Les dames sont à la gare. 9. Nos chevaux sont fatigués.

27.

1. il est ; 2. nous sommes ; 3. je suis ; 4. elles sont ; 5. tu es ; 6. ils sont ; 7. vous êtes ; 8. elle est.

9. I am ; 10. you are ; 11. she is ; 12. they are ; 13. thou art ; 14. we are ; 15. they (fem.) are ; 16. he is.

28.

Give the Feminine Singular, and Masculine and Feminine Plural of :

1. warm, chaud ; 2. polite, poli ; 3. large, grand ; 4. tired, fatigué ; 5. right, droit ; 6. bad, mauvais ; 7. small, petit ; 8. ill, malade ; 9. absent, absent ; 10. left, gauche ; 11. rich, riche.

29.

1. He is tall ; they (fem.) are tall. 2. She is short ; they (masc.) are short. 3. She is rich ; they (fem.) are rich. 4. We (masc.) are tired ; we (fem.) are tired. 5. Your sister is polite ; your brothers are polite.

30.

1. The ink is bad. 2. These horses are small. 3. We are very ill. 4. Our uncle's house is large. 5. This room is warm. 6. His letter is very polite. 7. My niece is tired. 8. These pens are very bad. 9. The church is small. 10. Your friends (fem.) are absent.

FOURTH LESSON.

18. The INTERROGATIVE of **je suis**, etc., is formed as in English, but a hyphen (-) is placed between the Verb and the Pronoun; as,

am I ?	suis-je ?	are we ?	sommes-nous ?
is he ?	est-il ?	are you ?	êtes-vous ?

PRON. *swéesh*, *ay-t'ill*, *somm noo*, *ate voo*.

19. The NEGATIVE is always formed as explained in Rule 11; as,

I am not	je ne suis pas	am I not ?	ne suis-je pas ?
she is not	elle n'est pas	are we not ?	ne sommes nous pas ?
they are not	ils ne sont pas	are you not ?	n'êtes-vous pas ?

EXERCISE I.

1. She is not vain.¹ 2. These horses are not old.² 3. Are you not satisfied³ ? 4. Is he not too young⁴ ? 5. Am I not late ? 6. We (fem.) are not tired. 7. Those ladies are pretty.⁵ 8. Our rooms are not small. 9. Your neighbours⁶ are very rich.

1 vain, 2 vieux (masc. sing. and plur.), 3 satisfait, 4 jeune, 5 joli, 6 voisin.
PRON. 1 *vang*, 2 *ve-er*, 3 *säh-tiss-fay*, 4 *shern*, 5 *sho-le*, 6 *vo'äh-zang*.

20. QUESTIONS must be changed when translating, as follows :

Has THE SOLDIER a gun ? = THE SOLDIER has HE a gun ?

Le soldat a-t-il un fusil ?

Have THE MEN the horses ? = THE MEN have THEY the horses ?

Les hommes ont-ils les chevaux ?

Is THE LAMP on the table ? = THE LAMP is SHE on the table ?

La lampe est-elle sur la table ?

The above construction is only used when the SUBJECT in questions is a Noun. The Subject, which comes immediately after the Verb in English questions, is printed above in CAPITALS.

EXERCISE II.

1. Has the postman¹ brought² a letter ? 2. Have those officers bought your horses ? 3. Are not these flowers³ very pretty. 4. Is your sister at (the) church ? 5. Has that gentleman⁴ two sons or three ? 6. Has the doctor⁵ seen your friend ? 7. Are not the newspapers on the table ? 8. Is not the waiter⁶ here ? 9. Is his house large ?

1 facteur, 2 apporté, 3 fleur (fem.), 4 monsieur (plural: messieurs), 5 docteur, 6 garçon. PRON. 1 *fühk-ter*, 2 *äh-por-teh*, 3 *fier*, 4 *mer-se-er*, 5 *may-se-er*, 6 *dok-ter*, 6 *gahr-song*.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Monsieur S. est-il à la maison ?	Is Mr. S. at home ?
Oui, monsieur, il est dans le salon. ¹	Yes, sir, he is in the drawing-room.
Les dames sont-elles en ² haut ² ?	Are the ladies upstairs ?
Non, elles ne sont pas en haut.	No, they are not upstairs.
Où avez-vous été ³ aujourd'hui ⁴ ?	Where have you been to-day ?
Nous avons été ³ à l'église.	We have been to (the) church.
N'êtes-vous pas fatigués ?	Are you (plur.) not tired ?
Si, ⁵ nous sommes bien ⁶ fatigués.	Yes, we are very tired.
Voulez-vous une tasse ⁷ de café ⁸ ?	Will you [have] a cup of coffee ?
Oui, madame, merci. ⁹	Yes, madam, thank-you.

PRON.—1 *sāh-long* ; 2 *ahng oh* ; 3 *eh-teh* ; 4 *oh-shoohr-dwe* ; 5 YES is rendered by *si*, in answering a negative question ; 6 *be-ang* (*bien* is often used instead of *très*) ; 7 *tāhss* ; 8 *kāh-feh* ; 9 *mair-sc*.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

31.

1. Nous ne sommes pas satisfaits. 2. N'est-elle pas jolie ?
 3. Nous n'avons pas rencontré leur voiture. 4. Ce monsieur est-il malade ? 5. Cette chambre n'est-elle pas chaude ?
 6. Les livres sont-ils sur la table ? 7. Ces plumes ne sont-elles pas mauvaises ? 8. Votre docteur n'est-il pas très riche ?
 9. Le facteur a-t-il apporté nos lettres ?

32.

1. sommes-nous ? 2. es-tu ? 3. êtes-vous ? 4. est-elle ?
 5. sont-ils ? 6. suis-je ? 7. sont-elles ? 8. est-il ?
 9. am I ? 10. are they (masc.) ? 11. is he ? 12. are we ? 13. art thou ? 14. are you ? 15. is she ? 16. are they (fem.) ?

33.

1. I am not ; 2. we are not ; 3. thou art not ; 4. you are not ;
 5. he is not ; 6. they are not ; 7. are we not ? 8. is he not ? 9. are you not ? 10. am I not ? 11. are they not ? 12. is he not ?

34.

1. Is the table (the table is she) here ? 2. Are not the letters (the letters are they not) there ? 3. Are these houses (these houses are they) small ? 4. Has not the doctor (the doctor has he not) written ?
 5. Has your friend (your friend has he) bought the carriage ?

35.

1. Are those ladies vain ? 2. Are not these flowers pretty ?
 3. Is not that officer young ? 4. Have your sons brought the parcel ? 5. Is not his sister's husband ill ?

21. The PAST TENSE is generally changed into the 'PERFECT TENSE when translating ; as,

PAST :	The man saw : <i>into</i>	}	L'homme a vu.
PERFECT :	The man HAS SEEN.		
PAST :	Did* you speak ? <i>into</i>	}	Avez-vous parlé ?
PERFECT :	HAVE you SPOKEN ?		
PAST :	The lady did* not buy : <i>into</i>	}	La dame n'a pas acheté.
PERFECT :	The lady HAS not BOUGHT.		
PAST :	Did* they not find ? <i>into</i>	}	N'ont-ils pas trouvé ?
PERFECT :	HAVE they not FOUND ?		

* DID must be changed into HAVE, HAS or HAD.

(NOTE carefully that the PAST PARTICIPLE can only be used after HAVE, HAS, or HAD. *Je reçu, nous trouvé*, etc., is impossible French, just as 'she written, they spoken,' is bad English.)

EXERCISE III.

1. I received (=I have received). 2. My friend broke¹ the glass.² 3. Did you hear³ the noise⁴ ? 4. She lost⁵ her umbrella. 5. Did the doctor read⁶ my note⁷ ? 6. He did not open⁸ the parcel. 7. Did they not see the fire (=conflagration,⁹ accidental fire) ? 8. We did not open⁸ the door.

1 brisé (past participle), 2 verre (masc., exception to rule), 3 entendu (past participle), 4 bruit (masc.), 5 perdu (past participle), 6 lu (past participle), 7 note (fem.), 8 ouvert (past participle), 9 incendie (masc., exception to rule).

PRON. 1 bree-zeh, 2 vair, 3 ahng-tahng-dee, 4 brwee, 5 pair-dee, 6 LEE, 7 not, 8 oo-vair, 9 ang-sahng-de.

22. OF THE, FROM THE are translated **du** instead of **de le**.

TO THE, AT THE " " **au** " **à le**.

PRONUNCIATION.—dee, oh.

of the doctor, du docteur	to the doctor, au docteur
from the postman, du facteur	at the postman, au facteur

NOTE.—**du** and **au** are only used before MASCULINE SINGULAR Nouns beginning with a Consonant ; they are therefore never used instead of **de la**, **de l'**, **à la**, **à l'**, thus :

of the hotel, de l'hôtel	to the hotel, à l'hôtel
from the house, de la maison	at the house, à la maison

EXERCISE IV.

1. from the garden ; 2. to the doctor ; 3. of the knife ; 4. to the arm ; 5. from the church ; 6. at the hotel. 7. Did you receive the doctor's bill¹ ? 8. Who found the gentleman's gloves ? 9. The last² day of the month. 10. The soldier's gun is here.³ 11. Did you see the doctor's carriage ?

1 compte (masc.), 2 dernier, 3 ici. PRON. 1 kongt, 2 dair-ne-eh. 3 ias-e.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Avez-vous pris ¹ une tasse de café ?	Did you take a cup of coffee ?
Non, j'ai pris une tasse de thé.	No, I had (=took) a cup of tea.
Le facteur a-t-il apporté une lettre pour ² vous ?	Did the postman bring a letter for you ?
Non, mais ³ il a apporté un paquet pour votre frère.	No, but he brought a parcel for your brother.
Quel est le nom ⁴ du docteur ?	What is the doctor's name ?
Pourquoi ⁵ ont-ils ouvert les fenêtres ⁶ de la chambre ?	Why did they open the windows of the room ?

PRON.—1 *pree* ; 2 *poohr* ; 3 *may* ; 4 *nong* ; 5 *poohr-ko'äh* ; 6 *fer-nay-tr.*

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

36.

1. Votre oncle a-t-il reçu ma note ? 2. Les journaux sont-ils sur la table ? 3. Les chevaux du docteur sont-ils petits ? 4. Le mari de votre sœur est-il grand ?

5. Le facteur est-il malade ? 6. Les soldats de ces officiers sont-ils fatigués ? 7. Ces fleurs ne sont-elles pas jolies ?

37.

1. I saw—I have seen, we saw ; 2. he bought—he has bought, they bought ; 3. we lost—we have lost, she lost ; 4. she read—she has read, you (have) read ; 5. you opened—you have opened.

38.

1. we did not receive—we have not received ; 2. they did not receive—they have not received ; 3. he did not find ; 4. I did not find ; 5. you did not buy ; 6. she did not buy.

39.

1. did I see?—have I seen ? 2. did you write?—have you written ? 3. did we send ? 4. did she bring ? 5. did they break ? 6. did he hear ? 7. did the soldier see?—the soldier has he seen ?

40.

1. did we not lose?—have we not lost ? 2. did he not open—has he not opened ? 3. did you not receive ? 4. did I not break ? 5. did not the postman bring?—the postman has he not brought ?

41.

1. from the chair, to the chair ; 2. of the hour, at the hour ; 3. of the month, at the month ; 4. the nephew's, to the nephew ; 5. of the room, to the room ; 6. from the hotel, at the hotel ; 7. of the fire, at the fire ; 8. from the price, at the price ; 9. of the man.

FIFTH LESSON.

23. 'IT' is translated by **il** if referring to a Masculine Noun mentioned just previously, and **elle** if referring to a Feminine Noun :

Where is your parcel ?
It is on the table.
Where is his chair ?
It is here.

Où est votre paquet ?
Il est sur la table.
Où est sa chaise ?
Elle est ici.

24. 'THEY' is translated **ils** or **elles**, according to the gender of the Noun just previously mentioned ; as,

I have seen your pens ;
THEY are on the table.

J'ai vu vos plumes ;
elles sont sur la table.

EXERCISE I.

1. Have you heard his voice ? Yes, it is very strong.¹ 2. I read his letter ; it is very short.² 3. We bought this novel³ ; it is very interesting.⁴ 4. Have you bought the house ? No ; it is sold.⁵ 5. Where are the forks ? They are not good.⁶

1 fort, 2 court, 3 roman, 4 intéressant, 5 vendu, 6 bon (masc.), bonne (an irregular feminine form). PRON.—1 for, 2 koohr. 3 ro-mahng, 4 ang-teh-ress-ahng, 5 vahng-dee, 6 bong, bonn.

25. OF THE, FROM THE are translated **des** instead of **de les**.

TO THE, AT THE " " **aux** " **à les**.

PRONUNCIATION.—day, oh.

des, aux are the only forms used in the Plural ; as,

of the hats, **des** chapeaux
from the houses, **des** maisons
of the churches, **des** églises
from the men, **des** hommes

to the hats, **aux** chapeaux
at the houses, **aux** maisons
to the churches, **aux** églises
to the men, **aux** hommes

EXERCISE II.

1. the pages¹ of the books ; 2. the feathers² of the birds³ ; 3. the boys⁴ boots⁵ ; 4. the girls⁶ shoes.⁷ 5. We gave⁸ the money⁹ to the waiters.⁴ 6. They spoke¹⁰ to the workmen's¹¹ wives.¹² 7. I wrote to our friend's brothers. 8. We sent the parcel to your uncle's sons. 9. They saw the soldiers from the windows of our house.

1 page (fem.), 2 plume (fem.), 3 oiseau (masc.), 4 garçon (boy, or waiter), 5 bottine (fem.), 6 fille, 7 soulier (masc.), 8 given, donné, 9 argent (masc.), 10 spoken, parlé, 11 ouvrier, 12 femme (pronounced : fähm).

PRON.—1 pahsh, 2 pleem, 3 wah-zoh, 4 gahr-song, 5 bot-teen, 6 fee-yer, 7 soo-le-eh, 8 donn-eh, 9 ahr-shahng, 10 pahr-leh, 11 oov-re-eh.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Votre leçon ¹ est-elle difficile ² ?	Is your lesson difficult ?
Non, elle est très facile. ³	No, it is very easy.
Mon parapluie est-il là ?	Is my umbrella there ?
Oui, il est dans cette chambre.	Yes, it is in this room.
Ses gants sont-ils bruns ⁴ ?	Are her gloves brown ?
Non, ils sont noirs. ⁵	No, they are black.
Avez-vous vu sa montre ⁶ ?	Did you see her watch ?
Oui, elle est très jolie.	Yes, it is very nice.
J'ai acheté ces bottines, ⁷ mais elles sont très mauvaises.	I have bought these boots, but they are very bad.

1 *ler-song*; 2 *diff-c-sill*; 3 *fah-sill*; 4 *brung*; 5 *no'ahr*; 6 *mong-tr*; 7 *bot-een*.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

42.

1. Où sont les chambres des garçons ? 2. N'avez-vous pas entendu les voix des messieurs ? 3. Il a apporté le compte du docteur. 4. Avez-vous vu mon journal ? Oui, il est sur la chaise. 5. N'avez-vous pas perdu la lettre du voisin ? Non, elle est là.

6. Où sont mes fleurs ? Elles sont sur la table. 7. La fenêtre est-elle ouverte ? 8. Vos voisins ne sont-ils pas absents ? 9. La femme n'est-elle pas malade ?

43.

1. Have you my hat ? No, it is there. 2. Where is her bird ? It is not here. 3. They have a knife, but it is bad. 4. We saw his house ; it is very large. 5. The workmen are not satisfied.

44.

1. Have you brought the chairs ? They are not good. 2. Where is the lamp ? It is broken. 3. Have you seen the table ? Is it not too small ? 4. I heard his (*or her*) voice ; it is very strong. 5. We saw your neighbour's garden ; it is very large. 6. We received the feathers (*plumes*) ; they are very pretty.

45.

1. the ladies' umbrellas ; 2. the officers' gloves ; 3. to the gentlemen's horses ; 4. to the neighbours' gardens ; 5. the pages of the books ; 6. at the corners (*coin*, * *masc.*) of the streets.

46.

1. Is not your friend's note (*your friend's note is she not*) very short ? 2. Have you brought the glasses ? No, they are broken. 3. Are not these novels interesting ? 4. Are these chairs good ? 5. Are not those letters interesting ? *pronounced : *ko'ang*.

26. SOME (OR ANY) is translated the same as OF THE, thus :

- | | |
|----------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1. some bread, du pain | 3. some meat, de la viande |
| 2. any money, de l'argent | 4. some friends, des amis |

PRON.—1 dee pang, 2 der lahr-shahng (sh like s in 'measure'); 3 der lāh ve-ahngd, 4 day z'āh-me.

Have you ANY bread ? = Have you OF THE bread ?

Avez-vous du pain ?

They have bought SOME books = They have bought OF THE books.

Ils ont acheté des livres.

SOME is only translated as above if a Noun follows,—see pars. 103, 111.

EXERCISE III.

1. some beer¹; 2. any cheese²; 3. some ink; 4. any glasses;
5. some butter³; 6. any salt⁴; 7. some salad⁵; 8. any water;
9. some flowers. 10. He has bought some pens and (some)
pencils. 11. Did you find any money on the table? 12.
They (have) had⁶ some soup. 13. Did you hear any noise?

1 bière (fem.), 2 fromage (masc.), 3 beurre (masc.), 4 sel (masc.), 5 salade (fem.), 6 eu (past participle). PRON.—1 be-air, 2 fro-mahsh, 3 ber, 4 sell, 5 sāh-lāhd, 6 EE (this is an exception to the rules of pronunciation, eu being usually pronounced 'er' in French).

27. ANY after NOT is simply translated **de** or **d'**; as,

We have not any bread.	Nous n'avons pas de pain.
Have you not any friends ?	N'avez-vous pas d' amis ?

28. NO before a Noun is translated the same as NOT ANY; as,

They have no soup.	Ils n'ont pas de soupe.
Have they no money ?	N'ont-ils pas d' argent ?

29. SOME OR ANY must be expressed in French, even if omitted in English; as,

He had bread and water.	Il a eu du pain et de l'eau.
-------------------------	--

EXERCISE IV.

1. We have not any soup. 2. Has he not any matches¹?
3. Have you no money? 4. I have not any time.² 5. She has no gloves. 6. Have we not any sugar³? 7. This gentleman has no sisters. 8. Have they not any beer? 9. They have not received any letters. 10. The men had bread, cheese and wine. 11. Have you friends in (à) Paris?

1 allumette (fem.), 2 temps (masc.), 3 sucre (masc.).

PRON. 1 āhl-EE-mett, 2 tahng, 3 SEEKr.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Avez-vous de la bière ?	Have you any beer ?
Oui, j'ai un verre de bière.	Yes, I have a glass of beer.
A-t-il des amis à Paris ?	Has he any friends in Paris ?
Je ¹ ne sais pas. ¹	I do not know.
Son frère n'est-il pas en ² haut ² ?	Is not his brother upstairs ?
Il n'a pas de frères.	He has no brothers.
N'avez-vous pas de sel ici ?	Have you not any salt here ?
Si, ³ il est là.	Yes, it is there.
Qui a ouvert la porte ?	Who has opened the door ?
Pourquoi n'avez-vous pas écrit à votre frère ?	Why have you not written to your brother ?

PRON.—1 *sher* ner say päh; 2 *ahng* oh (literally, in high); 3 *se* ('yes' is translated *si* when answering a negative question).

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

47.

1. Avez-vous du pain, du fromage et du beurre ? 2. Nous n'avons pas d'eau. 3. J'ai de la soupe, de la viande, et de la salade. 4. Ils n'ont pas de sel. 5. N'a-t-elle pas de sucre dans son café ?

6. Il a du temps et de l'argent. 7. N'avez-vous pas d'amis ? 8. Ces dames n'ont pas de chapeaux. 9. Les messieurs n'ont-ils pas d'allumettes ?

48.

1. some paper ; 2. some soup ; 3. any ink ; 4. some workmen ; 5. any cheese ; 6. some salad ; 7. some water ; 8. any pens ; 9. some sugar ; 10. any money ; 11. some beer ; 12. some birds.

49.

1. Have you any letters ? 2. We have some sugar and (some) salt. 3. Have they any meat and (any) salad ? 4. He has some money. 5. Has she bought any pens ?

50.

1. some bread, no bread (*pas de pain*) ; 2. some water, no water ; 3. some soup, not any soup ; 4. some parcels, not any parcels ; 5. some matches, no matches ; 6. some ink, no ink.

51.

1. She sold some butter. 2. They did not sell any butter. 3. We gave some money to the boys. 4. I did not give any money to the waiter. 5. They had (=have had) some soup. 6. Has she not had any soup ? 7. You saw some friends. 8. Did you not see any friends ?

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISES ON LESSONS 1 TO 5.

1.

a, the, my, his, her, its, our, your, their, this, that,	}	knife
which, what, what a	}	couteau
the, my, his, her, its, our, your, their, these, those,	}	knives
which, what	}	couteaux

Practise in the same way the following words in the Singular and Plural :
 street, rue ; hotel, hôtel ; church, église ; fire, feu ; voice,
 voix (fem.) ; uncle, oncle ; handwriting, écriture.

2.

1. a table, two tables ; 2. one month, three months ; 3. the postman, the postmen ; 4. one hat, three hats ; 5. one arm, two arms ; 6. this fire, these fires ; 7. his horse, his horses ; 8. the price, the prices.

3.

1. I have ; 2. thou hast not ; 3. has he ? 4. has she not ? 5. we have ; 6. have you not ? 7. they have ; 8. have they (fem.) not ?

4.

1. am I ? 2. art thou not ? 3. he is ; 4. is she not ? 5. we are not ; 6. are you ? 7. they are not ; 8. are they ?

5.

1. her address ; 2. this hotel ; 3. that handwriting ; 4. these men ; 5. those women ; 6. that friend ; 7. this water ; 8. their house.

6.

1. I received ; 2. we found ; 3. he wrote ; 4. I sent ; 5. she lost ; 6. they brought ; 7. did you see ? 8. she did not hear ; 9. they did not read ; 10. did we not sell ? 11. you did not open ; 12. did they give ?

7.

1. he is absent, they (fem.) are absent ; 2. our uncle is tired, your aunt is tired ; 3. he is rich, they are rich ; 4. they are polite, she is not polite ; 5. we (fem.) are satisfied, the waiter is not satisfied ; 6. you (masc.) are young, you (fem. plur.) are young.

8.

1. my sister's husband ; 2. the officer's horses ; 3. the neighbour's garden ; 4. the lady's carriage ; 5. the boys' books ; 6. the windows of the house ; 7. the men's sons.

9.

1. the school, of the school, to the school ; 2. the room, of the room, to the room ; 3. the garden, from the garden, at the garden ; 4. the addresses, of the addresses, to the addresses ; 5. the hotels, from the hotels, at the hotels.

10.

1. Is the book on the table ? 2. Are the boys in their room ? 3. Have the ladies the gloves ? 4. Has the soldier his gun ? 5. Is not your friend here ? 6. Has not the boy my pencil ?

11.

1. Where is the address ? It is on the table. 2. Have you my umbrella ? No, it is there. 3. Did you open the letter ? Is it not from your sister ? 4. Have you seen the flowers ? Yes, they are very pretty. 5. Where is the umbrella ? It is here.

12.

1. some cheese ; 2. some beer ; 3. any pens ; 4. some knives and (some) forks. 5. He has not any shoes. 6. They have not any cheese. 7. Have they not any sisters ?

13.

1. Our neighbour is very old. 2. Have you written to your friend ? 3. They have not heard the noise. 4. We sold those horses. 5. Did they not read the newspapers ? 6. You have a good fire. 7. The postman did not bring this letter.

14.

1. The flowers are very pretty. 2. Is your sister's friend (fem.) tall ? 3. Are the workmen absent ? 4. I saw his brother's niece. 5. Why did you not speak to the men ? 6. Have you sent any money to the women ? 7. They have not any bread. 8. She bought some bread and (some) cheese.

15.

1. Did you give any money to the men ? 2. Has he sent the parcel to the ladies ? 3. Did you see any birds in the garden ? 4. These pages are very interesting. 5. Are these boots good ? 6. She gave a note to the boy.

SIXTH LESSON.

Most French Verbs end in the Infinitive in **er**. This **er** is called the **TERMINATION**; the rest of the word is called the **STEM**, thus :

	INFINITIVE.	STEM.	PRONUNCIATION.
(to) give	donner	donn...	donn-eh, donn
" speak	parler	parl...	pahr-leh, pahrl
" copy	copier	copi...	ko-pe-eh, ko-pe
" pass	passer	pass...	páhss-eh, páhss

30. The **PRESENT TENSE** of Verbs ending in **er** is formed by adding to the Stem the Terminations printed in thick type below :

Present Tense of (TO) GIVE, **donner**

I give	je donne	we give	nous donn ons
thou givest	tu donn es	you give	vous donn ez
he } gives	il } donn e	they (m.) } give	ils } donn ent
she }	elle }	they (f.) }	elles }

PRON. **sh**er donn, **tee** donn, ill donn; noo donn-*ong*, voo donn-eh, ill donn.

Notice that of the above terminations, only **ons** and **ez** are sounded.

EXERCISE I.

1. he speaks; 2. we copy; 3. you pass; 4. they accept¹;
5. I visit²; 6. he shuts³; 7. they (fem.) close³; 8. we speak;
9. she copies; 10. they pass; 11. I* accept; 12. she visits.

1 accepter, 2 visiter, 3 fermer, (to) close or (to) shut.

PRON. 1 áhck-sep-teh, 2 ve-ze-teh, 3 fair-meh.

The Third Person Singular or Plural must be used after a Noun.

The boy copies. **Le garçon copie.** | The ladies } **Les dames parlent.**
speak.

EXERCISE II.

1. He gives some bread and (some) butter to the men. 2. The men speak to the postmen. 3. Her son copies a letter. 4. We speak to the men. 5. You accept his money. 6. They visit the house. 7. She shuts the door. 8. The men pass before¹ the house. 9. We give (some) bread and (some) cheese to the workmen. 10. They close the windows. 11. He visits this school. 12. They copy the bills.

*Je, le, ne, and other words where the final e is the only vowel, become j', l', n', etc., if the next word begins with a vowel or an H mute: as,

I accept, j'**accepte**, instead of je **accepte**. 1. **devant** (pron. der-vahng).

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Quels sont les jours de la semaine¹ ?

Les jours de la semaine sont :
lundi,² mardi,³ mercredi,⁴
jeudi,⁵ vendredi,⁶ samedi,⁷
dimanche.⁸

Quelle heure est-il ?

Il est une heure.

Est-il deux heures ?

Il n'est pas trois heures.

N'est-il pas quatre⁹ heures ?

What are the days of the week ?

The days of the week are :
Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday,
Thursday, Friday, Saturday,
Sunday.

What time (=hour) is it ?

It is one o'clock.

Is it two o'clock ?

It is not three o'clock.

Is it not four o'clock ?

PRON.—1. ser-mane ; 2 lung-de ; 3 mahr-de ; 4 mair-krer-de ; 5 sher-de ;
6 vahng-drer-de ; 7 sähm-de ; 8 de-mahngsh ; 9 kältr.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

52.

1. Je n'ai pas lu ce roman ; est-il intéressant ? 2. Où avez-vous acheté vos souliers ? 3. Nous avons trouvé les allumettes. 4. Ils ont eu du fromage et de la salade. 5. Elle donne du pain aux oiseaux. 6. Avez-vous vu les bottines de ces ouvriers ? 7. Les plumes de votre oiseau sont très jolies.

53.

1. il donne ; 2. nous parlons ; 3. vous copiez ; 4. elles passent ; 5. j'accepte ; 6. tu visites ; 7. elle ferme ; 8. ils parlent ; 9. nous fermons ; 10. vous acceptez ; 11. je donne ; 12. il passe.

54.

1. we give ; 2. he gives ; 3. they give ; 4. you give ; 5. I give ; 6. thou givest ; 7. she gives ; 8. they (fem.) give ; 9. the postman gives ; 10. the workmen give.

55.

1. we speak ; 2. I copy ; 3. she passes ; 4. you speak ; 5. they copy ; 6. they (fem.) pass ; 7. thou speakest ; 8. he copies.

56.

1. you accept ; 2. thou visitest ; 3. we shut ; 4. they close ; 5. I accept ; 6. he visits ; 7. she shuts ; 8. they (fem.) close ; 9. I accept ; 10. we visit ; 11. you close ; 12. she shuts.

57.

1. He speaks to his nephew. 2. We give the shoes to the girls. 3. I accept your book. 4. They visit the house and the garden. 5. We pass the workmen's houses. 6. His wife shuts the door.

31. 'I am giving, she is speaking, they are passing,' and similar constructions (called the PROGRESSIVE FORM), must be changed before translating into 'I give, she speaks, they pass,' etc.; as,
 My friend is copying = my friend copies. **Mon ami copie.**
 The ladies are speaking = the ladies speak. **Les dames parlent.**

EXERCISE III.

1. He is smoking¹ his pipe.² 2. We are cutting³ the paper.
 3. She is looking⁴ for⁴ the address. 4. They are lighting⁵ the fire. 5. I am carrying⁶ the parcel. 6. You are seeking⁴ your friends. 7. He is wearing⁶ boots. 8. I am speaking to my nephew. 9. She is giving some money to the workmen.

1 fumer, 2 pipe(fem.), 3 couper, 4 chercher, (to) look-for or seek, 5 allumer, 6 porter, (to) carry or wear.

PRON. 1 FEE-meh, 2 peep, 3 koo-peh, 4 shair-sheh, 5 äh-LEE-meh, 6 por-teh.

32. Questions are formed by placing the Pronoun after the Verb.

In translating, the English construction is therefore changed thus :

does he give ? or is he giving ? *into* gives he ?
 do they cut ? or are they cutting ? „ cut they ?
 do you visit ? or are you visiting ? „ visit you ?

NOTE that DO and DOES are not translated at all.

The Verb and the Pronoun are connected by a hyphen, and -t- is inserted in the Third Person Singular ; as,

does he give ? donne-t-il ?	do they speak ? parlent-ils ?
does she copy ? copie-t-elle ?	do we light ? allumons-nous ?
do you close ? fermez-vous ?	do I give ? donné-je ?

PRON. donn-till ? ko-pe-tell ? fair-meh voo ? pahrl-till ? ah-LEE-mong noo ?
 donn-aish ?

Notice that an acute accent is placed over the e in the First Person Singular ; but this form is rarely employed,—see page 48.

Is the boy copying ? = The boy copies he ? **Le garçon copie-t-il ?**

EXERCISE IV.

1. Are they smoking cigars¹ or cigarettes² ? 2. Is she looking for a letter ? 3. Does he carry a walking-stick³ ?
 4. Are you lighting your pipe ? 5. Are those men wearing hats ? 6. Are they (fem.) closing their windows ? 7. Do they accept those presents⁴ ? 8. Are you looking for your bird ? 9. Does your friend speak to his neighbour ?

1 cigare (masc.), 2 cigarette (fem.), 3 canne (fem.), 4 cadeau (masc.).

PRON. 1 se-gahr, 2 se-gäh-rett, 3 kähn, 4 käh-doh.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

The new words in these sentences should be learnt.

Fumez-vous des cigares ?	Do you smoke cigars ?
Quelquefois, ¹ mais générale- ment ² je fume des cigarettes.	Sometimes, but generally I smoke cigarettes.
Portez-vous toujours ³ une canne ? [pluie.	Do you always carry a walking- stick ?
Je porte quelquefois un para- Que ⁴ cherchent-ils ? [souliers ?	I sometimes carry an umbrella. What are they looking for ?
Portent-ils des bottines ou des	Do they wear boots or shoes ?
Qui a allumé les feux ?	Who has lighted the fires ?
Nous allumons toujours le gaz ⁵ à cette heure.	We always light the gas at this hour. [book ?
Coupe-t-il les pages de ce livre ?	Is he cutting the pages of that

1 kèl-ker-fo'ah ; 2 sheh-neh-rähl-mahng ; 3 too-shoohr ; 4 ker ; 5 gahz.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

58.

1. Il porte toujours un parapluie. 2. Ces dames portent des gants. 3. Les soldats fument des pipes. 4. Je fume toujours des cigarettes. 5. Passez-vous (*or* Dépassez-vous, *see Key*) généralement sa porte ? 6. Acceptent-ils de l'argent de votre fils ?

59.

1. she is passing=she passes ; 2. they are smoking=they smoke ; 3. I am cutting ; 4. we are looking for ; 5. he is lighting ; 6. you are carrying ; 7. the workmen are giving.

60.

1. parlez-vous ? 2. acceptent-ils ? 3. coupons-nous ? 4. fermé-je ? 5. donne-t-il ? 6. passes-tu ? 7. la femme cherche-t-elle ? 8. les messieurs visitent-ils ?

61.

1. is he wearing=wears he ? 2. do they light=light they ? 3. are you giving=give you ? 4. does he copy=copies he ? 5. are we closing ? 6. does she accept ? 7. are they visiting ? 8. am I copying ?

62.

1. Is he smoking a pipe ? 2. Are you wearing gloves ? 3. I am giving cigars to the men. 4. Do they carry umbrellas ? 5. Is your neighbour shutting the windows ? 6. Are the gentlemen visiting the school ? 7. Do you give presents to the girls ?

SEVENTH LESSON.

33. The **NEGATIVE** of all French Verbs is formed in the same way (see paragraph 11), **DO** and **DOES** not being translated.

In translating, the English construction is therefore changed thus :

I do not give *or* I am not giving *into* **I give not**

Does he not copy ? *or* Is he not copying ? *into* **Copies he not ?**

Your friend does not speak
(*or* is not speaking) } **Votre ami ne parle pas**

Are not those men smoking ? } **Ces hommes ne fument-ils pas ?**
= Those men smoke they not ? }

EXERCISE I.

1. He does not find¹ the way.² 2. They do not pay³ their debts.⁴ 3. Are you not living⁵ in⁶ this house ? 4. Does she not often⁷ sing⁸ ? 5. Are they not looking for their bags ? 6. Why⁹ do you not cut this string¹⁰ ? 7. He is not living there. 8. Do I not sing well¹¹ ?

1 trouver, 2 chemin (masc.), 3 payer, 4 dette (fem.), 5 demeurer, 6 dans, 7 souvent, 8 chanter, 9 pourquoi, 10 ficelle (fem.), 11 bien.

PRON.—1 troo-veh, 2 sher-mang, 3 pay-yeh, 4 dett, 5 der-mer-eh, 6 dahng, 7 soo-vahng, 8 shahng-teh, 9 poohr-kwäh, 10 fe-sell, 11 be-ang.

34. **WHO ? WHOM ?** **qui ?** | **WHAT ?** **que ?**

PRON.—kee, ker. **que** before a vowel or an H mute becomes **qu'**.

WHO is speaking to the officer ?	Qui parle à l'officier ?
WHOM did you see there ?	Qui avez-vous vu là ?
WHAT do you copy ?	Que copiez-vous ?
WHAT have they bought ?	Qu' ont-ils acheté ?

WHAT ? is translated by **quel ?** etc., before a Noun, or before any part of the Verb **TO BE (être)** followed by a Noun,—see pars. 12, 59. **WHAT ?** is translated by **que ?** before any other Verb,—see also paragraphs 39, 143.

EXERCISE II.

1. Who is shutting the door ? 2. Who has put¹ the matches on² the table ? 3. What are you copying ? 4. What did she accept ? 5. Whom are they looking for ? 6. Who opened the window ? 7. What did you say³ ? 8. What is he carrying ? 9. Who is wearing gloves ? 10. What did we pay ? 11. Who has had the time ? 12. What is he giving to the postman ? 13. To whom did you write ?

1 mis (past partic.), 2 sur, 3 said, dit (past part.). PRON. 1 mee, 2 seer, 3 dee.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Avez-vous appris ¹ les nombres ²	Have you learnt the numbers
depuis ³ un jusqu' ⁴ quatre ?	from (=since) one to (=till)
Oui, monsieur.	Yes, sir. [four ?
Prononcez ⁵ après ⁶ moi ⁷ : cinq, ⁸	Pronounce after me : five, six,
six, sept, huit, neuf, dix. ⁸	seven, eight, nine, ten.
Il est cinq heures.	It is five o'clock.
Est-il six heures ?	Is it six o'clock ?
Il n'est pas sept heures.	It is not seven o'clock.
N'est-il pas huit heures ?	Is it not eight o'clock ?
Est-il neuf heures ou ⁹ dix heures ?	Is it nine or ten o'clock ?

1 *äh-prec* ; 2 *nong-br* ; 3 *der-pwe* ; 4 *shüss-kah* ; 5 *pro-nong-seh* ; 6 *äh-pray* ; 7 *mo'ah* ; 8 *sangk*, * *siss*, *sett*, *wit*, *nerf*, *diss** ; 9 *oo*.

*The final Consonant in *cinq*, *six*, *sept*, *huit*, *neuf*, *dix* is NOT pronounced, if the next word in the phrase begins with a pronounced Consonant. Thus, *six pages*=see *pahsh*. *cinq dames* (five ladies)=*sang dähm*,—see page 37. But: *cinq hommes* (five men), *sang k'omm*, because the *H* is not pronounced.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

63.

1. Que cherchez-vous là ? 2. Le docteur n'est-il pas votre oncle ? 3. Pourquoi (why) n'allument-ils pas le gaz ? 4. Pourquoi ne ferme-t-il pas les fenêtres ? 5. Parle-t-il quelquefois aux ouvriers ? 6. Il accepte toujours un cigare. 7. Je ne porte pas d'allumettes. 8. Donnez-vous toujours de l'argent au facteur ? 9. N'a-t-elle pas reçu de cadeaux ?

64.

1. I do not find ; 2. he is not singing ; 3. they do not live (reside) ; 4. we are not copying ; 5. you do not find ; 6. she is not speaking.

65.

1. do I not carry ? 2. dost thou not smoke ; 3. does he not cut ? 4. does she not look for ? 5. do we not find ? 6. do you not live (reside) ? 7. do they (masc.) not pay ? 8. do they (fem.) not pass ?

66.

1. is he not accepting ? 2. are we not visiting ? 3. am I not speaking ? 4. are they (masc.) not giving ? 5. art thou not closing ? 6. Is she not lighting ? 7. are you not wearing ?

67.

1. Who is smoking ? 2. Whom did you pass ? 3. What does he copy ? 4. What did you give ? 5. Who sent this parcel ? 6. To whom did you write ? 7. What is he smoking ? 8. What did they bring ? 9. Whom does he invite ? 10. What do they pay ?

35. Some useful PREPOSITIONS are :

1. FOR, *pour* ; 2. IN, *dans* ; 3. ON, *sur* ; 4. UNDER, *sous* ;
 5. WITH, *avec* ; 6. WITHOUT, *sans* ; 7. AFTER, *après* ; 8. AGAINST, *contre*
 PRON. 1 poor, 2 *dahny*, 3 *sehr*, 4 *soo*, 5 *ah-veck*, 6 *salng*, 7 *äh-pray*, 8 *kongtr*.

EXERCISE III.

- ✓ 1. for her son ; 2. in the fire ; 3. on the chair ; 4. under the table ; 5. with your knife ; 6. without that gentleman.

36. The PAST PARTICIPLE of Verbs ending in **er** is formed by changing the **er** into **é** ; as,

(to) give, **donner** ; PAST PARTICIPLE : given, **donné**

The PRONUNCIATION of these two words is the same, viz. 'donn-eh.'

We spoke *or* we have spoken.

She accepted *or* she has accepted.

Did they carry ? *or* Have they carried ?

He did not close *or* he has not closed.

Nous **AVONS parlé**.

Elle **A accepté**.

ONT-ils **porté** ?

Il n'A pas **fermé**.

The PAST PARTICIPLE can only be used after the Auxiliary Verbs 'to have' and 'to be' (see Rule 21). The Auxiliaries are printed above in SMALL CAPITALS.

EXERCISE IV.

1. I paid=I have paid ; 2. we visited ; 3. she gave ; 4. he did not find ; 5. did they pass ? 6. did you not accept ? 7. He copied a letter. 8. They closed the door. 9. We did not speak to the doctor. 10. Did I not give money to the boy ?

37. Distinguish carefully between the PRESENT and the PAST TENSE in English.

DO, DOES, AM, IS, and ARE are PRESENT ; DID is PAST ; as,

they pass *or* they are passing

ils passent

they passed *is translated* they HAVE **passé**

ils ont **passé**

I DO not give *or* I am not giving

je ne donne pas

I DID not give *is translated* I HAVE not given

je n'ai pas donné

he DOES not find *or* he is not finding

il ne trouve pas

DID he not find ? *is translated* HAS he not found ?

n'a-t-il pas trouvé ?

we DO not carry *or* we are not carrying

nous ne portons pas

we DID not carry *is translated* we HAVE not carried

nous n'avons pas porté

✓**EXERCISE V.**

1. He does not light the fire. 2. Did they not light the gas ?
 3. We do not carry umbrellas. 4. Did they not carry guns ? 5.
 Are you not paying your debts ? 6. I paid your bill (account).

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Quels sont les noms des mois ?	What are the names of the months ?
Les noms des mois sont :	The names of the months are :
janvier, ¹ février, mars, avril, ¹	January, February, March,
mai, ² juin, juillet, août, ²	April, May, June, July,
septembre, ³ octobre, novembre, ³ décembre. ³	August, September, October, November, December.
Il est une heure et demie. ⁴	It is half past one (o'clock).
N'est-il pas cinq heures et demie ?	Is it not half past five ?
Est-il neuf ⁵ heures ⁵ et demie ?	Is it half past nine ?
Il n'est pas dix ⁶ heures ⁶ et demie.	It is not half past ten.

1 *shahng-ve-eh*, *feh-vre-eh*, *mahrss*, *äh-vree* ; 2 *may*, *shü-ang* or *shwang*, *shü-ee-yay* or *shwe-yay*, oo ; 3 *sep-tahng-br*, *ok-to-br*, *no-vahng-br*, *deh-sahng-br* ; 4 *der-me* ; 5 *ner v'er* ; 6 *dec z'er*.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

68.

1. Qui demeure dans cette maison ? 2. Le facteur n'a-t-il pas apporté une lettre pour vous ? 3. Qui a envoyé ce paquet ? 4. Que donnez-vous à cet homme ? 5. Le docteur ne (dé)passe-t-il pas souvent notre maison ?

6. Qu'a-t-elle dit à la fille ? 7. De qui avez-vous reçu ce cadeau ? 8. À qui a-t-il payé le compte ? 9. Qu'avez-vous coupé avec mon couteau ?

69.

1. for your sister ; 2. in our garden ; 3. on the paper ; 4. under his chair ; 5. with a pencil ; 6. without this money ; 7. for which man ? 8. under his address.

70.

1. we found ; 2. they closed ; 3. she accepted ; 4. I sang ; 5. thou lightedst ; 6. you carried ; 7. he looked for ; 8. they (fem.) wore ; 9. I smoked ; 10. the man spoke.

71.

1. did he accept ? 2. they did not find ; 3. did you pay ? 4. did we not smoke ? 5. she did not copy ; 6. did they (fem.) not sing ? 7. I did not visit ; 8. didst thou cut ?

72.

1. he does not smoke ; 2. she did not give ; 3. we are not closing ; 4. I did not accept ; 5. is she not singing ? 6. did they not look for ? 7. do we not light ? 8. did they (fem.) not carry ?

EIGHTH LESSON.

38. OURS, le (or la) nôtre | MINE, le mien, la mienne
 YOURS, le (or la) vôtre | THINE, le tien, la tienne
 THEIRS, le (or la) leur | HIS, HERS, le sien, la sienne

The Plural is formed by changing *le* or *la* into *les*, and adding an *s* to the Singular.—PRONUNCIATION of Singular and Plural: *noh-tr*, *voh-tr*, *ler*; *me-ang*, *me-enn*; *te-ang*, *te-cnn*; *se-ang*, *se-cnn*.

The above POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS take the Gender and Number of the word they stand for; as,

Your house and HIS.
 OUR horses and YOURS.
 His brother and HERS.
 He did not find his letters,
 but MINE.

Votre maison et la sienne.
 Nos chevaux et les vôtres.
 Son frère et le sien.
 Il n'a pas trouvé ses lettres, mais
 les miennes.

EXERCISE I.

1. I have your key¹ and you have mine. 2. Has she taken² my ticket³ or hers? 3. We have their pictures,⁴ and they have ours. 4. He has not lighted his lamp,⁵ but⁶ theirs. 5. Did you meet⁷ my daughters,⁸ or his? 6. I lost her watch⁹ and mine. 7. They did not take my papers, but hers. 8. Has he not spent¹⁰ his money and yours?

1 clef or clé (both words feminine, and both pronounced: *kleh*); 2 pris (past participle), 3 billet (masc.), 4 tableau (masc.), 5 lampe (fem.), 6 mais, 7 rencontrer, (to) meet, 8 fille, 9 montre (fem.), 10 dépenser, (to) spend.

PRON.—1 *kleh*, 2 *pre*, 3 *bee'e-yay*, 4 *täh-bloh*, 5 *lahngp*, 6 *may*, 7 *rahng-kong-treh*, 8 *fee'e*, 9 *mong-tr*, 10 *deh-pahng-seh*.

39. WHAT? after a Preposition is translated *quoi?* as,

Of what are you speaking?

What did he pay with?

De quoi parlez-vous?

Avec quoi a-t-il payé?

PRON.—*ko'äh* or *kwäh*.

PREPOSITIONS always come before their Object in French.

WHAT! in exclamations is also translated *quoi!* as,

What! you are here!

Quoi! vous êtes ici!

EXERCISE II.

1. On what have you written the address? 2. What did you say? 3. Which picture did they buy? 4. Whom did he meet at the concert¹? 5. What did she send the things² in? 6. Why do you sing? 7. What did he find in the book?

1 concert (masc.), 2 chose (fem.). PRON. 1 *kong-sair*, 2 *shohz*.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

À quelle heure fermez-vous la maison ?	At what time do you shut the house ?
Nous fermons généralement à huit heures et demie.	We generally close at half past eight.
N'a-t-elle pas allumé le gaz ?	Has she not lighted the gas ?
Non, mais elle a mis deux lampes sur la table.	No, but she has put two lamps on the table.
Pourquoi n'ont-ils pas envoyé les tableaux ?	Why have they not sent the pictures ?
Ils n'ont pas eu le temps.	They have not had (the) time.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

73.

1. N'avez-vous pas trouvé vos amis dans le jardin ? 2. Pourquoi ne paye-t-il pas les dettes de son fils ? 3. Ne demeurent-ils pas avec leur oncle ? 4. Cette dame ne chante-t-elle pas bien ? 5. N'a-t-il pas rencontré les officiers et les soldats ?

6. Qu'ont-elles dit à leur mère ? 7. Qui cherchez-vous ici ? 8. Que donnent-ils à ces hommes ? 9. Qu'avez-vous reçu dans ce paquet ? 10. Vos voisins ont-ils un grand jardin ?

74.

1. my uncle and hers ; 2. our aunt and his ; 3. their room and yours ; 4. your church and theirs ; 5. this hotel and mine.

75.

1. our books and theirs ; 2. his pens and mine ; 3. her gloves and yours ; 4. their guns and ours ; 5. your keys and his.

76.

1. in what ? 2. of what ? 3. to what ? 4. on what ? 5. under what ? 6. with what ? 7. what for ? 8. from what ? 9. What ! is he there ? 10. What ! you saw your friend ? 11. What ! they are here ?

77.

1. I found your keys and mine. 2. We met our friends and yours. 3. Did you see her carriage and his ? 4. We did not receive your letter, but theirs. 5. Did they not accept our prices, but hers ? 6. She is not looking for my pictures, but theirs. 7. We found our pipes and his (plural). 8. Did you not meet your daughter and his ? 9. What did you carry the things on ? 10. What did he break the glass with ?

40. ADJECTIVES generally follow the Noun in French; as,

our ABSENT friends=our friends ABSENT **nos amis absents**
 a FRENCH (français) town=a town FRENCH **une ville française**
 these BLACK (noir) cows=these cows BLACK **ces vaches noires**

(Adjectives agree with their Noun in Gender and Number,—see Rule 17.)

PRON. *noh z'äh-me z'ähb-sahng*, *inn vill frahng-saze*, *say vähsh no'ahr*.

EXERCISE III.

1. an English¹ town; 2. (some) German² officers; 3. (some) French ships³; 4. this round⁴ table; 5. those rich men; 6. my right hand⁵; 7. his electric⁶ lamp. 8. Did they bring these yellow⁷ flowers? 9. Did you drink⁸ red⁹ wine¹⁰?

1 anglais, 2 allemand, 3 vaisscau (masc.), 4 rond, 5 main (fem.), 6 électrique, 7 jaune, 8 drunk, bu (past participle), 9 rouge, 10 vin (masc.).

PRON. 1 *ahng-glay*, 2 *ähl-mahng*, 3 *vay-soh*, 4 *rong*, 5 *mang*, 6 *ch-leck-trick*, 7 *shohn*, 8 *bee*, 9 *roosh*, 10 *vayg*.

41. PAST PARTICIPLES follow the same Rules as Adjectives; as,

a BROKEN window=a window BROKEN **une fenêtre brisée**

The letter is LOST.

La lettre est perdue.

The pictures are SOLD.

Les tableaux sont vendus.

PAST PARTICIPLES are invariable if coming after 'to have'; as,
 The ladies have WRITTEN the letters. | *Les dames ont écrit les lettres.*

EXERCISE IV.

1. a closed door; 2. two lost children; 3. The string is cut. 4. His debts are paid. 5. Are the windows open(ed)? 6. The children are not yet¹ found. 7. Has he sold² his horses? 8. His horses are not yet sold.² 9. Have they drunk the water³?

1 encore, 2 vendu, 3 eau (fem.). PRON. 1 *ahng-kor*, 2 *vahng-dee*, 3 *oh*.

RULE ON THE GENDER OF NOUNS.

The Rule given in Lesson I. for ascertaining the Gender of French Nouns must now be learned, as in future we shall only indicate the Gender of Nouns that are exceptions to that Rule. These exceptions should be learned as they occur; but most of them are in accordance with the fuller Rule given in

HUGO'S "FRENCH GENDERS SIMPLIFIED."

This book (post free 1s.) includes a complete list of the exceptions.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Comment¹ prononce-t-on² les nombres de cinq à dix suivis³ d'une consonne⁴ ?

Dans ce cas⁵ on⁶ ne prononce pas la consonne finale.⁷

Par⁸ exemple : cinq francs, six schellings,⁸ sept⁹ pages, huit livres (sterling), neuf sous, dix centimes.⁹

Cent¹⁰ centimes font¹¹ un franc ; cinq centimes font un sou.

How does one pronounce the numbers from five to ten followed by a consonant ?

In this case one does not pronounce the final consonant.

For example : five francs, six shillings, seven pages, eight pounds (sterling), nine sous, ten centimes.

A hundred centimes make a franc ; five centimes make a sou.

1 *komm-ahng* ; 2 *pro-nongss-tong* ; 3 *swe-ve* ; 4 *kong-sonn* ; 5 *kah* ; 6 *ong* ; 7 *fe-nähl* ; 8 *pahr egg-zahng-pl. sang frahng*, see *sher-lang* ; 9 *say pahsh*, see *lee-vr stair-lang, ner soo*, see *sahng-teem* ; 10 *sahng* ; 11 *fong*.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

78.

1. J'ai trouvé votre clef, mais pas la sienne. 2. Avez-vous vendu leur maison ? Non, mais j'ai vendu la nôtre. 3. Qui a pris mon billet ? 4. Je n'ai pas le vôtre. 5. Qu'a-t-elle dit à sa sœur ? 6. J'ai votre lampe ; la mienne est brisée. 7. À qui avez-vous envoyé la montre ? 8. N'a-t-elle pas payé ces comptes ? J'ai payé les miens.

79.

1. a black hat=a hat black ; 2. a warm room ; 3. the cold water (fem.) ; 4. this red ink ; 5. his right arm ; 6. her left hand (fem.) ; 7. these vain girls ; 8. (some) polite men ; 9. those French soldiers ; 10. what English towns ?

80.

1. a lost parcel ; 2. the broken stick ; 3. this tired horse ; 4. the invited ladies ; 5. The door is open(ed). 6. The lamps are broken. 7. Are the windows shut ? 8. My letter is lost. 9. Is their money spent ?

81.

1. Did you meet the French officers ? 2. We saw the German ship. 3. They are at an English hotel. 4. We wear black boots. 5. Did you take the red pencils ? 6. They have round hats. 7. He bought some yellow paper. 8. Have you a black bag ?

NINTH LESSON.

42. ME, TO ME	me	US, TO US	nous
THEE, TO THEE	te	YOU, TO YOU	vous
HIM, IT (masc.)	le	} THEM	les
HER, IT (fem.)	la		
TO HIM, TO HER	lui	TO THEM	leur

PRON.—mer, noo ; ter, voo ; ler, lăh, lay ; lwe, ler.

The above words are placed in French IMMEDIATELY BEFORE the Verb.

They are called PERSONAL PRONOUNS, and are the OBJECT of the Verb which they FOLLOW in English, but precede in French, thus :

They break THEM.

The man speaks TO-US.

We are copying IT.

Ils **les** brisent.

L'homme **nous** parle.

Nous **le** (or **la**) copions.

EXERCISE I.

1. They carry it. 2. We give (to-)them the flowers. 3. I am-smoking* it (fem.). 4. She is-looking-for* us. 5. You find them. 6. He meets you. 7. The ladies are-speaking to-us. 8. The doctor is-speaking to-him. 9. The girl is-singing to-her.†

43. **me, te, le, la** before a vowel (or an H mute) become **m', t', l', l' ;** as,

The man brings IT (fem.).

His neighbours like HIM.

L'homme l'apporte.

Ses voisins l'aiment.

PRON.—lom lăh-port ; say vo'ăh-zang lame.

EXERCISE II.

1. We invite¹ him. 2. I invite her. 3. She forgets² us. 4. They forget me. 5. We accept it. 6. They accept them. 7. The boy brings it (fem.). 8. The ladies are-singing to-them.† 9. They find it (fem.). 10. Your sister is-copying it. 11. He likes³ it. 12. We like them. 13. He brings us some bread and butter.

1 inviter, 2 oublier, 3 aimer. PRON. 1 ang-vee-teh, 2 oo-ble-eh, 3 ay-meh.

EXERCISE III.

1. Your friends are-looking-for you. 2. We meet them. 3. Our aunt is-speaking to-her. 4. You forget them. 5. Where is the letter ? He is-copying-it. 6. Do the boys wear them ? 7. I give (to-)them the money.

*English words connected by hyphens are rendered in French by one word.

† In French an Object must follow, such as : a song, une chanson.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Apprenez ¹ par ² cœur ³ les nombres suivants :	Learn by heart the following numbers :
Onze, ³ douze, treize, quatorze, quinze, ³ seize, ⁴ dix-sept, dix-huit, dix-neuf, vingt. ⁴	Eleven, twelve, thirteen, fourteen, fifteen, sixteen, seventeen, eighteen, nineteen, twenty.
Fermez la porte, s'il ⁵ vous plaît. ⁵	Shut the door, if you please.
Avec plaisir, ⁶ madame.	With pleasure, madam.
Où demeurez-vous ?	Where do you live ?
Nous demeurons à Londres. ⁷	We live in (=at) London.

1 *äh-prer-nèh* ; 2 *pär ker* ; 3 *ongz, dooz, traze, käh-torz, kangz* ; 4 *saze, dèez-sett, dèez-witt, dèez-nèrf, vang* ; 5 *sill voo play* ; 6 *play-zèer* ; 7 *long-dr.*

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

82.

1. La porte de sa maison est-elle fermée ? 2. Oui, ils ferment la maison à dix heures et demie. 3. Qui avez-vous rencontré dans la rue ? 4. Quel est le nom de ce monsieur ? 5. Quels sont les noms des jours ? 6. Quelle heure est-il ? 7. N'est-il pas une heure et demie ?

83.

1. they meet us ; 2. he pays me ; 3. I look-for him ; 4. he breaks them ; 5. she meets her ; 6. we find you ; 7. you sing it (masc.) ; 8. your friend copies it (fem.).

84.

1. he speaks to me ; 2. we give to her ; 3. she sings to them† ; 4. they forget us ; 5. they accept me ; 6. you like them ; 7. I invite her ; 8. she brings to me ; 9. her brother lights it (fem.).

85.

1. I am-copying it (masc.) ; 2. she is-singing to-him† ; 3. we are-seeking her ; 4. they are-bringing to-us ; 5. we are-meeting him ; 6. you are-closing it (fem.) ; 7. he is-forgetting us ; 8. we are-smoking them ; 9. I am-looking-for you ; 10. she is-lighting it ; 11. they are-accepting us ; 12. we are-meeting him. 13. Your brother is-looking-for you. 14. His sister finds it (masc.). 15. This postman brings (to-) him his letters. 16. Your friend forgets us. 17. His uncle and (his) aunt invite me.

44. The rule in Paragraph 42 of course applies to **QUESTIONS** also, as the following examples show.

Does he speak **TO THEM** ?
Do they thank **US** ?
Are you forgetting **HIM** ?
Does she invite **YOU** ?

Leur parle-t-il ?
Nous remerciant-ils ?
L'oubliez-vous ?
Vous invite-t-elle ?

(By Rule 42, **me, te, le, etc.**, **ALWAYS** come immediately before the Verb.)

EXERCISE IV.

1. Does he speak to you ? 2. We do not praise¹ her.
3. Do you thank² them ? 4. Is he looking-at³ us ? translate : regards³ he us ? 5. Do they strike⁴ him ? 6. Are you looking-at³ me ? 7. We thank you. 8. Is your friend looking-for us ? 9. They are-breaking it (fem.) 10. Why do you hide⁵ them ? 11. Have you [got⁶] it ? 12. We have them.

1 louer, 2 remercier, 3 (to) look at, regard, regarder, 4 frapper, 5 cacher.

PRON.—1 loo-eh, 2 rer-mair-se-eh, 3 rer-gahr-deh, 4 fräh-peh, 5 käh-sheh. 6 in such phrases, 'got' is not to be translated.

45. The rule in Paragraph 42 also applies to **Negations**, thus :

I haven't [got] **IT**.
She is not speaking **TO HIM**.
Do you not like **THEM** ?
Do they (fem.) not invite **HER** ?

Je ne l'ai pas.
Elle ne lui parle pas.
Ne **les** aimez-vous pas ?
Ne l'invitent-elles pas ?

As **me, te, le, etc.**, must always **IMMEDIATELY** precede the Verb, the **ne** comes before these Pronouns.

EXERCISE V.

1. He does not copy it.* 2. Do you not thank us ? 3. Are you not speaking to him ? 4. We do not give (to) them the books. 5. Why do you not look-at me ? 6. He does not hide it (fem.). 7. Why does she not bring the letter to us ? 8. My friend does not like them. 9. Does not his teacher¹ praise him ? 10. Why do you not sing to them† ? 11. Do you not meet them every² day² ? 12. Why does he not smoke those cigars ? 13. He does not like them. 14. Why is this window not shut ? 15. I am closing it (fem.).

1 maitre (master), 2 =all the days, tous les jours. PRON.—1 maitr, 2 too lay shoohr.

* **IT** is to be translated by **le** unless marked to the contrary, or referring to a Feminine Noun. † see remark on page 38.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Est-il midi ¹ ?	Is it twelve o'clock (noon) ?
Il est minuit. ²	It is twelve o'clock (midnight).
Il est une heure cinq ³ <i>or</i> cinq minutes. ³	It is five minutes past one o'clock.
Est-il deux heures dix ⁴ <i>or</i> dix minutes ⁴ ?	Is it ten minutes past two o'clock ?
Il n'est pas trois ⁵ heures un [*] quart. ^{*6}	It is not a quarter past three o'clock.
N'est-il pas quatre heures vingt ⁶ <i>or</i> vingt minutes ⁶ ?	Is it not twenty minutes past four o'clock ?
Il est cinq ⁷ heures vingt-cinq <i>or</i> vingt-cinq minutes. ⁷	It is twenty-five minutes past five o'clock.

1 *me-de* ; 2 *min-we* ; 3 *sangk*, *or sang me-neet* ; 4 *diss*, *or dee me-neet* ; 5 *tro'ah z'er ung kar* ; 6 *vang*, *or vang me-neet* ; 7 *sang k'er vangt-sangk or vangt-sang me-neet*.
** or et quart.*

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

86.

1. Nous avons reçu votre lettre de vendredi dernier. 2. Qui a acheté le cheval noir de votre voisin ? 3. J'ai trouvé la lampe sur la table ronde. 4. Pourquoi n'a-t-elle pas allumé le feu dans ma chambre ? 5. Il nous parle tous les jours. 6. Qui demeure dans cette petite maison ? 7. Je ne le sais pas.

87.

1. is he copying it (fem.) ? 2. do you praise them ? 3. we thank them ; 4. are they looking at us ? translate : regard they us ? 5. does he hide you ? 6. I strike him ; 7. is he spending it (masc.) ? 8. are they singing to her† ?

88.

1. I do not speak to them ; 2. we are not carrying them ; 3. do you not thank him ? 4. she is not hiding her ; 5. do you not forget us ? 6. we do not give (to) them the address ; 7. they do not pay the money to her ; 8. are they not meeting you every day (=all the days, tous les jours) ?

89.

1. The officer does not praise him. 2. Do not the ladies thank you ? 3. He is not looking at her. 4. Why does he strike them ? 5. I am not hiding it (fem.). 6. Does not your neighbour speak to them ? 7. Is not the postman bringing any letters to you ? 8. We do not invite them.

TENTH LESSON.

Besides the Verbs ending in the Infinitive in **er**, of which there are more than 4,000, there are about 50 Verbs ending in **re**, and 300 ending in **ir**, which belong to the Regular Conjugations.*

EXAMPLES OF VERBS ending in **re**.

1. (to) **SELL, vendre.** 2. (to) **LOSE, perdre.** 3. (to) **GIVE BACK, rendre.**
 4. (to) **REPLY, répondre.** 5. (to) **EXPECT or (to) WAIT-FOR, attendre.**
 PRON.—1 *vahng-dr*, 2 *pair-dr*, 3 *rahng-dr*, 4 *reh-pong-dr*, 5 *äh-tahng-dr*.

46. The **PRESENT TENSE** of Verbs ending in **re** is formed by adding to the Stem the **TERMINATIONS** printed in thick type below.

Present Tense of (TO) **SELL, vendre.**

I sell	je vends	we sell	nous vendons
thou sellest	tu vends	you sell	vous vendez
he sells	il vend	they sell	ils vendent

PRON.—*vahng*, *vahng*, *vahng* ; *vahng-dong*, *vahng-deh*, *vahngd*.

There is no termination in the Third Person Singular, which consists of the Stem only. The STEM of these Verbs consists of the part preceding **re**.

EXERCISE I.

1. he loses ; 2. we give-back ; 3. you are-selling ; 4. they reply ; 5. I am-expecting ; 6. she is-selling ; 7. they lose ; 8. we are-replying ; 9. you are-waiting-for ; 10. your friend is-giving-back ; 11. the officer is-replying ; 12. these men are-losing ; 13. The man is-smoking a cigar. 14. Why do they not pay [for†] the watch ? 15. They reply to us always¹ by² return of (the) post.² 16. Have you seen his house ? Yes, he is-selling it. 17. Enclosed³ I return the sample⁴ to-you. 18. He expects us at five o'clock.

1 toujours, 2 par retour du courrier, 3 ci-inclus, 4 échantillon.

PRON.—1 *too-shoohr*, 2 *pähr rer-tooohr DEE koohr-e-eh*, 3 *se-ang-klee*, 4 *eh-shahng-te-yong*.

* The Regular Verbs are generally divided in the following way : 1st Conjugation ending in **er**, 2nd in **ir**, 3rd in **oir**, 4th in **re**. This is A VERY BAD AND ARBITRARY ARRANGEMENT, which makes the Verbs needlessly difficult.

The **re** Verbs ought to be learnt next to the **er** Verbs, as they only differ slightly. The **oir** Verbs are placed by the best modern grammars among the Irregular Verbs (see page 87), and this is the better way. For fuller explanation, see Hugo's "French Verbs Simplified."

† Words in square brackets are not to be translated ; words in parentheses () are required in French.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Il est six heures moins ¹ cinq <i>or</i> cinq minutes. ¹	It is five minutes to six o'clock (=six hours less five).
Est-il sept heures moins dix <i>or</i> dix minutes ² ?	Is it ten minutes to seven o'clock ?
Il n'est pas huit heures moins ³ un quart ³ (<i>or</i> le quart).	It is not a quarter to eight o'clock.
N'est-il pas neuf ⁴ heures ⁴ moins vingt <i>or</i> vingt minutes ?	Is it not twenty minutes to nine o'clock ?
Il est dix heures moins vingt-cinq <i>or</i> vingt-cinq minutes.	It is twenty-five minutes to ten o'clock.

1 *mo'ang sangk*, *or sang* me-neet ; 2 the pronunciation of these numbers is the same as shown on pages 37 and 41 ; 3 *mo'ang z'ung kar* ; 4 *ner v'er*.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES

90.

1. Avez-vous trouvé la lettre de ce monsieur ? 2. Non, mais je la cherche partout (everywhere). 3. Avez-vous oublié de (=to) les inviter ? 4. Où avez-vous trouvé l'adresse de mon fils ? 5. Il ferme la porte tous les jours à dix heures et demie. 6. Ne parlent-ils pas de vous ? 7. À quelle heure allume-t-il le gaz ? 8. Les messieurs cherchent-ils les dames ?

91.

1. il le vend ; 2. nous le rendons ; 3. vous l'attendez ; 4. je lui réponds ; 5. ils le perdent ; 6. nous leur vendons ; 7. vous lui rendez ; 8. ils me donnent.

92.

1. I lose ; 2. thou lovest ; 3. he loses ; 4. we lose ; 5. you lose ; 6. they lose ; 7. I am-replying (=I reply) ; 8. he is-replying ; 9. she is-replying ; 10. we are-replying ; 11. you are-replying ; 12. they are-replying.

93.

1. I am-expecting ; 2. he is-selling ; 3. we are-replying ; 4. they are-giving-back ; 5. you are-losing ; 6. he is-smoking ; 7. are they singing ? 8. he does not strike ; 9. is she not speaking ? 10. he is-expecting it ; 11. they are-selling them ; 12. we reply to them ; 13. I give (to) her a watch. 14. They bring us the newspaper every day. 15. Is she not speaking to him ?

47. NEGATIONS and QUESTIONS are of course formed in the same way with all Verbs, as explained in paragraphs 31, 32, and 33 :

are you selling ? <i>or</i> do you sell ?	vendez-vous ?
he does not lose <i>or</i> he is not losing	il ne perd pas
do they not give back ? <i>or</i> are they not giving back ?	} ne rendent-ils pas ?
does he wait for ? <i>or</i> is he waiting for ?	
	attend-il* ?

* No -t- is used in the 3rd person, because the Verb does not end in a vowel.

EXERCISE II.

1. does she sell ? 2. are you losing ? 3. are they replying ?
4. I do not give back ; 5. she does not expect ; 6. do we not sell ? 7. is she not giving-back ? 8. why do you not reply ?

EXERCISE III.

1. I am-waiting-for the train.¹ 2. Do they not sell postage² stamps³ ? 3. Is he not losing his money ? 4. I lend³ (to-) them my dictionary,⁴ and they do not return⁵ it. 5. I met your brother to-day⁶ ; do you not expect him this evening⁷ ?

1 train, 2 timbre-poste* (**masc.**), 3 (to)lend, prêter, 4 dictionnaire (**masc.**), 5=give back, 6 aujourd'hui, 7 soir.

PRON.—1 *trang*, 2 *tang-br* posst, 3 *pray-teh*, 4 *dick-se-on-air*, 6 *oh-shoohr-dwe*, 7 *so'ähr*.

* Plural : timbres-poste.—Colloquially, **poste** is generally omitted.

48. The PAST PARTICIPLE of Verbs ending in **re** is formed by changing **re** into **u** ; as,

(to) SELL, vendre ;	PAST PARTICIPLE : SOLD, vendu
they lost <i>or</i> they have lost	ils ont perdu
did he not wait ?	n'a-t-il pas attendu ?

EXERCISE IV.

1. I correspond¹ with you, and² he corresponded¹ with us.
2. He hears³ them, and she heard³ the noise. 3. They do not descend,⁴ and they did not descend.⁴ 4. Does he return⁵ it ? Did he return⁵ the money ? 5. Are you not waiting-for me ? Did you not expect your neighbour ? 6. Does the man not sell it ? 7. Did not the man sell the horses ?

1 correspondre, 2 et, 3 entendre, 4 descendre, 5=give back.

PRON.—1 *korr-ess-pong-dr*, 2 *eh*, 3 *ahng-tahng-dr*, 4 *dess-ahng-dr*.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Vous avez appris les nombres depuis un jusqu'à vingt, n'est-ce pas ¹ ? Oui, ² monsieur.	You have learnt the numbers from one to twenty, have you not ? Yes, sir.
Apprenez par cœur les nombres suivants :	Learn by heart the following numbers :
Vingt ³ et un, vingt-deux, ³ vingt-trois, ⁴ vingt-quatre, vingt-cinq, vingt-six, vingt-sept, vingt-huit, vingt-neuf.	Twenty-one, twenty-two, twenty-three, twenty-four, twenty-five, twenty-six, twenty-seven, twenty-eight, twenty-nine.

1 literally : is it not, n'est pas ; 2 *n'est-ce pas* here has no negative meaning ; see note 2 on page 23 : 3 *vingt-tch-ung*, *vangt-der* ; 4 *vangt-tro'ah*, etc. (the T of *vingt* is sounded in the numbers 21 to 29 inclusive).

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

94.

1. Avez-vous pris du thé ou du café ? 2. Le facteur lui a-t-il apporté une lettre ? 3. Non, mais il a apporté un paquet pour vous. 4. Vos leçons sont-elles très difficiles ? Non, madame, elles sont assez (enough=rather) faciles. 5. Vos souliers ne sont-ils pas noirs ? Non, ils sont bruns. 6. Avez-vous rencontré le mari de votre sœur ?

95.

1. do you sell ? 2. he does not lose ; 3. are they not replying ? 4. are you not giving-back ? 5. I do not correspond ; 6. thou dost not wait ; 7. do you not hear ? 8. she is not descending ; 9. do they not reply ? 10. are they not corresponding ?

96.

1. I have not been-waiting (=waited) ; 2. has he not descended ? 3. they have not been-selling (=sold) ; 4. have you not given back ? 5. he has been-corresponding (=corresponded) ; 6. has she lost ? 7. we have not heard ; 8. have you not replied ?

97.

1. he hears us ; 2. they do not sell them ; 3. she does not reply to them. 4. Do you give-back the samples to her ? 5. Do they not expect us to-day ? 6. They do not correspond with us. 7. I always^b lend^a (to) him stamps, and he does not return them. 8. Why do you not reply to their letter ? 9. She does not sell her house to us. 10. Who is losing ?

ELEVENTH LESSON.

49. The Pronouns **me, le, lui**, etc., always come before the Verb; in COMPOUND TENSES they are placed before the FIRST Verb.

A COMPOUND TENSE in French consists of a PAST PARTICIPLE preceded by part of "to have" or "to be."

He HAS written to us.		Il nous a écrit.
HAVE they spoken to him?		Lui ont-ils parlé?
We HAVE not replied	} to them.	Nous ne leur avons pas répondu.
or We did not reply		
HAVE you not sent	} to me?	Ne m'avez-vous pas envoyé?
or Did you not send		

EXERCISE I.

1. They have written to you. 2. Have you spoken to her?
3. We have not replied to them. 4. Have they not sent to us?
5. I have brought (to-) him the letters. 6. We have seen him to-day. 7. She did not give me the address. 8. Has he not returned the stamps to you? 9. They have not found it.

EXAMPLES OF VERBS ending in **ir**.

1. (to) FINISH, **finir**. 2. (to) FILL, **remplir**. 3. (to) OBEY, **obéir**.
4. (to) CHOOSE, **choisir**. 5. (to) PUNISH, **punir**.

PRON.—1 *fe-neer*, 2 *rahng-pleer*, 3 *a-beh-er*, 4 *sho'äh-zeer*, 5 *pee-neer*.

50. The PRESENT TENSE of Verbs ending in **ir** is formed by adding to the Stem the terminations printed in thick type below.

Present Tense of (TO) FINISH, **finir**.

I finish	je finis	we finish	nous finissons
thou finishest	tu finis	you finish	vous finissez
he finishes	il finit	they finish	ils finissent

PRON.—Singular: *fe-nee*; Plural: *fe-niss-ong*, *fe-niss-eh*, *fe-niss*.

Paragraphs 31, 32, 33 also apply to **ir** Verbs.

EXERCISE II.

1. They do not finish their tasks.¹ 2. Do these boys not obey? 3. We do not choose these colours.² 4. Do you not punish your dog³? 5. Why does she not fill the inkstand⁴? 6. Why do you not fill the coal-box⁵? 7. He is finishing your coat⁶ to-day. 8. My dog does not obey.

1 *a devoir*, 2 *couleur* (fem.), 3 *chien*, 4 *encrier*, 5 *seau à charbon*, 6 *habit*.

PRON.—1 *der-vo'ahr*, 2 *koo-ler*, 3 *she-ang*, 4 *ahng-kre-eh*, 5 *soh äh shähr-boug*, 6 *äh-be*.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Continuez¹ d'apprendre¹ les
nombres suivants :

Trente,² trente et un,² trente-
deux, etc. quarante,³ quarante
et un, quarante-trois, etc.
cinquante,⁴ cinquante et un,
cinquante-quatre, etc. soi-
xante,⁵ soixante et un, soixante-
cinq, etc. soixante-dix.⁶

Continue to learn the following
numbers :

Thirty, thirty-one, thirty-two.
etc. forty, forty-one, forty-
three, etc. fifty, fifty-one,
fifty-four, etc. sixty, sixty-
one, sixty-five, etc. seventy.

PRON.—1 *kong-te-NEE-eh* *dāh-prahng-dr* ; 2 *trahngt*, *trahngt-eh-ung* ;
3 *kāh-rahngt* ; 4 *sang-kahngt* ; 5 *so'āhss-ahngt* ; 6 *so'āhss-ahngt-diss*.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

98.

1. N'est-il pas dix heures et demie ? 2. Non, il est presque¹
onze heures. 3. Qui attendez-vous ? 4. J'attends ma sœur
par le train de Paris. 5. Quelle est la date² ? 6. Je l'ai
rencontré au mois de février à Lyon.³ 7. Nous avons reçu
une carte⁴ postale⁴ de votre frère vendredi dernier.

99.

1. we have spoken to them ; 2. she answered (to-) him ; 3. have
you written to her ? 4. has he not sent to us ? 5. they have not
seen me ; 6. I have not given her the book.

7. He did not bring (=he has not brought) the paper to us.
8. Did they not speak (=have they not spoken) to him ? 9. We
wrote (=we have written) to them. 10. Did she not lose it ?
11. They sent the parcel to you. 12. Have we not given back
the umbrella to her ?

100.

1. I am filling ; 2. thou art filling ; 3. he is filling ; 4. we are
filling ; 5. you are filling ; 6. they are filling ; 7. I am punishing ;
8. we are punishing ; 9. he finishes ; 10. they are choosing ;
11. do you obey ? 12. are they obeying ? 13. does she finish ?

101.

1. I am not punishing ; 2. they are not obeying ; 3. are you not
choosing ? 4. are we not finishing ? 5. She is finishing her letter.
6. Are you not filling the glasses ? 7. They do not finish their
lessons. 8. Does not this man punish the children ?

1 nearly ; 2 date ; 3 Lyons ; 4 post(al) card.

51. The PAST PARTICIPLE of Verbs ending in **ir** is formed by changing **ir** into **i**, thus :

(to) FINISH, **finir** ; Past Participle : FINISHED, **fini**. PRON.—**fe-ne**.

They have OBEYED (to) him.	Ils lui ont obéi.
I have not CHOSEN it.	Je ne l'ai pas choisi.
I did not choose it.	
Have you not PUNISHED him ?	Ne l'avez-vous pas puni ?
Did you not punish him ?	

EXERCISE III.

1. Why have you not filled the bottle¹ ? 2. They have not yet² finished their work.³ 3. We did not punish the thief.⁴ 4. Has she chosen this hat ? 5. Do these boys not obey (to) their teacher ? 6. Have they not punished^b him too-much^{5a} ? 7. We obeyed (to-) him with pleasure. 8. Did they not choose him at⁶ first⁶ ?

1 bouteille, 2 encore, 3 travail, 4 voleur, 5 trop, 6 d'abord.

PRON.—1 boo-tay'e, 2 ahng-kor, 3 träh-vah'e, 4 vo-ler, 5 tro, 6 däh-bor.

The Interrogative of French Verbs can be formed in two ways : either by placing the Pronoun after the Verb (see paragraph 32), or by prefixing **est-ce que** ? (is it that ?). **Est-ce que** ? (pron. ess-ker) corresponds to the English DO, DOES, DID, and should ALWAYS be used in the FIRST PERSON SINGULAR. **Est-ce que** ? frequently expresses surprise.

Do you smoke ?	Fumez-vous ? or Est-ce que vous fumez ?
Did they sing ?	Ont-ils chanté ? or Est-ce qu'ils ont chanté ?
Do I speak ?	Est-ce que je parle ? (<i>better than</i> parlé-je ?)
Do I sell ?	Est-ce que je vends ? (<i>not</i> vends-je)

52. Interrogative words (HOW ? WHEN ? WHERE ? WHY ? etc.) always BEGIN sentences like those in paragraph 20, thus :

Pourquoi le soldat a-t-il un fusil ? NOT Le soldat pourquoi a-t-il un fusil ?

EXCEPTION.—If the sentence begins with **que**, the Verb comes next, thus :

What is the lady singing ? or	Que chante la dame ? or
What is that the lady is singing ?	Qu'est-ce que la dame chante ?

The Verb is also often placed immediately after **où** (WHERE ?).

EXERCISE IV.

1. Why did the man speak to you ? 2. Where does the gentleman live ? 3. How did the lady sing ? 4. What did your neighbour send ? 5. Where are the soldiers ? 6. Why do the boys not copy their lessons ? 7. What did the postman say to you ? 8. What does your friend reply ?

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Finissons ¹ par les nombres de soixante ² et onze ² jusqu'à cent.	Let us finish with (=by) the numbers, from seventy-one to a hundred.
Soixante et onze, soixante-douze, soixante-treize, soixante-dix- sept, soixante-dix-neuf.	Seventy-one, seventy-two, sev- enty-three, seventy-seven, seventy-nine.
quatre-vingts, ³ quatre-vingt-un, ⁴ quatre-vingt-deux, quatre- vingt-dix, quatre-vingt-onze, quatre-vingt-dix-neuf, cent. ⁵	eighty, eighty-one, eighty-two, ninety, ninety-one, ninety- nine, a hundred.

PRON.—1 *fe-niss-ong* ; 2 *so'äh-sahngt-ch-ongz* ; 3 *käh-trer-vang* ;
4 *käh-trer-vang-ung* ; 5 *sahng*.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

102.

1. Pourquoi n'avez-vous pas fini mon habit ? 2. N'a-t-elle pas rempli les encriers ? 3. Ne vous a-t-il pas répondu par retour du courrier ? 4. Ils ne m'ont pas envoyé les échantillons. 5. Pourquoi ne l'avez-vous pas remercié ? 6. Quelle est la couleur de son habit ? 7. Quels sont les jours de la semaine ? 8. Avez-vous appris par cœur les nombres depuis un jusqu'à cent ? 9. Que regardez-vous ?

103.

1. he has finished ; 2. they have not filled ; 3. we have chosen ; 4. have you not obeyed ? 5. she has not punished ; 6. did you finish ? 7. she did not fill ; 8. he did not obey ; 9. did they not choose ? 10. did we not punish ?

104.

1. He is filling them. 2. They do not obey me. 3. We do not choose them. 4. Do you punish him ? 5. He is finishing it. 6. Has he not spoken to you ? 7. Have they not filled it ? 8. We have not replied to them. 9. Did they not give it back to you (see par. 96) ?

105.

1. Where are your gloves ? 2. Where does your brother live ? 3. Where did the man hide the parcel ? 4. Why is your window open ? 5. Why did the doctor not take his umbrella ? 6. Why is that hat there ? 7. What is your sister looking for ? 8. What did the soldiers find ?

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISES ON LESSONS 6¹ TO 11.

1.

1. I am speaking ; 2. thou dost not copy ; 3. is he smoking ?
4. he does not carry ; 5. does she not seek ? 6. we are singing ;
7. do you not live (reside) ? 8. they do not meet ; 9. are they
not spending ?

2.

1. Does your neighbour smoke cigars or cigarettes ? 2. Are
you looking for the butter ? 3. Does he wear a hat ? 4. She is
lighting the fire. 5. Are they not copying that letter ? 6. Why
do you not shut the door ?

3.

1. Who is this gentleman ? 2. Whom did you see at the hotel ?
3. What did she buy ? 4. What is he copying ? 5. What did
you give to the postman ? 6. To whom did you speak ?

4.

1. in the room ; 2. for her nephew ; 3. on your chair ;
4. under the table ; 5. with her pencil ; 6. without his mother ;
7. to the boy ; 8. from the niece ; 9. the lady's glove ; 10.
your brother's handwriting.

5.

1. he does not forget ; 2. he did not forget ; 3. do you invite ?
4. did you invite ? 5. they do not like ; 6. they did not like ;
7. do you light the fire ? 8. did you not light the gas ?

6.

1. your house or mine ; 2. their friends and ours ; 3. my
newspaper and hers ; 4. I met your brother and hers. 5. What
are you selling ? 6. From what do you copy it ? 7. On what did
she put it ? 8. Which horse did he buy ?

7.

1. a round hat ; 2. these round tables ; 3. an English officer ;
4. a French town ; 5. a tired lady ; 6. (some) rich men ; 7. warm
water ; 8. our absent friends.

8.

1. They are carrying it. 2. Your friend is looking for you.
3. We do not forget them. 4. Do you give them the money?
5. Why do they not invite us? 6. She does not thank me. 7.
Why do you not look at them? 8. Where are they hiding him?

9.

1. I do not lose; 2. art thou not selling? 3. he is not expecting;
4. we are not giving back; 5. are you waiting for?
6. they do not lose; 7. the boy does not answer; 8. why do the ladies not wait?

10.

1. I am waiting for my friend; 2. he did not sell the horses;
3. she does not reply to their letter; 4. did we not give back the umbrella?
5. they do not lose their money; 6. did you not sell the carriage?

11.

1. he sells it to his friends; 2. he wrote to me last week;
3. we gave them back the books; 4. she does not expect us to-day;
5. they did not correspond with us; 6. we are going down (==descending) the street.

12.

1. I do not obey; 2. thou dost not fill; 3. does he not choose?
4. we do not punish; 5. do you not finish? 6. do they not obey?
7. I did not fill; 8. did she not obey? 9. we did not punish;
10. have they not chosen?

13.

1. Is not my French dictionary on the table? 2. This gentleman is our uncle's doctor?
3. She did not thank us. 4. That ink is very bad. 5. They are at a German hotel.

14.

1. They closed the door at ten o'clock. 2. At what time do you light the gas?
3. Why did they not accept the money? 4. Who is losing? 5. Have you been to the concert?
6. Which picture did you choose? 7. What did you say to your teacher? 8. He brings me a letter every day.

TWELFTH LESSON.

53. Contrary to Paragraph 40, the following Adjectives come **before** the Noun in French :

1. good, **bon** ; bad, **mauvais** ; wicked, **méchant** ;
2. new (=different), **nouveau*** ; young, **jeune** ; old, **vieux*** ;
3. big, stout, **gros** ; large, tall, **grand** ; small, little, **petit** ;
4. beautiful, fine, handsome, **beau*** ; nice, **joli** ; ugly, nasty, **vilain**.

PRON.—1 *bong*, moh-vay, meh-shahng ; 2 *noo-voh*, *shern*, ve-er ;
3 *groh*, *grahng*, per-te ; 4 *boh*, *sho-le*, ve-lang.

IRREGULAR FEMININES : 1 *bonne* ; 2 *nouvelle*, *vieille* ; 3 *grosse* ; 4 *belle*.

PRON.—*bonn*, *noo-vell*, ve-ay'e, *grohss*, bell.

* Before Masculine Singular words beginning with a Vowel or an H mute, **nouvel**, **viell**, **bel** must be used, as : a handsome man, *un bel homme*.

EXERCISE I.

1. a good thing ; 2. these fine apples¹ ; 3. this little cat² ;
4. a pretty flower ; 5. what [a] small foot³ ! 6. an old fool⁴ ;
7. those large rivers⁵ ; 8. his nice ring⁶ ; 9. a bad opinion⁷ ;
10. these wicked men ; 11. that big bird⁸ ; 12. a new motor-car⁹.

1 *pomme*, 2 *chat*, 3 *piéd*, 4 *fou*, 5 *deuve* (**masc.**), 6 *bague*, 7 *opinion*,
8 *oiseau*, 9 *automobile*. PRON.—1 *pomm*, 2 *shäh*, 3 *pe-eh*, 4 *fou*,
5 *ferv*, 6 *bahg*, 7 *o-pe-ne-ong*, 8 *wäh-zoh*, 9 *oh-toh-moh-beel*.

54. When the Adjective comes before the Noun, **SOME** or **ANY** is usually translated **de**.

They have some fine pictures.

He sells good wine.

Ils ont **de** beaux tableaux.

Il vend **de** bon vin.

† **SOME** must be expressed in French, even if not in English (see par. 29).

EXERCISE II.

1. Here¹ is¹ some old wine. 2. Here¹ are¹ some beautiful rings.
3. There¹ is¹ a large aeroplane². 4. There¹ are¹ some big parcels.
5. Here is a good cat. 6. There are some small houses.
7. Here are some good pens. 8. There is some good butter.
9. They sell good beer and (good) wine.

1 *voici*, here is *or* here are ; 2 *voilà*, there is *or* there are ; 3 *avion*.

PRON.—1 *vo'äh-se*, 2 *vo'äh-lah*, 3 *äh-ve-ong*.

EXERCISE III.

1. Have you any good butter ? 2. We drank some bad wine.
3. They have bought some beautiful rings. 4. We have a bad opinion of you.
5. She wears a new hat every day.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Voici le reste des nombres cardinaux : cent un, cent dix, deux cents, quatre cents, huit cent ¹ soixante, mille, ² deux mille soldats, en ³ mil ⁴ huit cent soixante-dix, cent ⁵ mille, un million, ⁶ un milliard. ⁷	Here are the rest of the cardinal numbers : one hundred and one, one hundred and ten, two hundred, four hundred, eight hundred and sixty, a thousand, two thousand soldiers, in the year one thousand eight hundred and seventy, a hundred thousand, a million, a milliard.
---	---

1. *Cent* does not take an S in the Plural—(a) if followed by another number; (b) in dates, as *en quinze cent*; (c) if used instead of the ordinal number, as, *page deux cent*.—*Quatre-vingts* follows the same rules.

2. *Mille* (pronounced 'mill') never takes an S, and becomes *mil* in dates after Christ.

3. *En* (ahng), in the year. 4. mill. 5. A, AN, ONE before 100 or 1,000 are not translated in French; hyphens (-) are generally inserted in numbers 17 to 99, except 21, 31, 41, 51, 61, 71, where *et* is used. 6. mill-e-ony. 7. mill-e-ar.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

106.

1. Cette dame a acheté du thé et du café, du pain, du beurre et du fromage. 2. N'avez-vous pas encore lu le journal d'aujourd'hui? 3. Où avez-vous rencontré (monsieur) le docteur? 4. Voici vos gants. 5. Voilà nos amis. 6. Qui vous a dit cela (that)? 7. Pourquoi ne l'avez-vous pas puni? 8. Quelle opinion avez-vous de cet homme?

107.

1. a fine picture; 2. his bad opinion; 3. a good thing; 4. what an old horse! 5. this young man; 6. your big dog; 7. his pretty sister; 8. my new friend; 9. these nice flowers; 10. those large streets.

108.

1. fine horses; 2. young birds; 3. good apples; 4. new books; 5. bad cats; 6. beautiful rivers; 7. Have you any good pens? 8. He has large hands. 9. She has small feet. 10. Haven't they beautiful rings?

109.

1. Here are some pretty flowers. 2. Have you bought any old wine? 3. There is a good boy. 4. They have not any German beer. 5. We have found some bad apples. 6. Have you any young dogs?

55. RICHER, TALLER, etc., must be translated by MORE 'RICH, MORE TALL, etc.; RICHEST, TALLEST, by THE MORE RICH, THE MORE TALL. THAN is rendered by *que*.

He is TALLER than you.	Il est plus grand que vous.
They are YOUNGER than we.	Ils sont plus jeunes que nous.
She is MORE POLITE than her sister.	Elle est plus polie que sa sœur.
She is THE TALLEST.	Elle est la plus grande.
They (fem.) are THE MOST POLITE.	Elles sont les plus polies.

1.—IN after a Superlative† is translated as OF ;

2.—THAN before a Number is translated as OF ; thus,

The RICHEST* man IN the town.	L'homme le plus riche de la ville.
He has more THAN SIX horses.	Il a plus de six chevaux.

EXERCISE IV.

1. Our neighbours are richer than we. 2. Your garden is larger than ours. 3. Is not that tree¹ the highest² in the garden? 4. These girls are the youngest in the school. 5. Her foot is smaller than his. 6. Is she not prettier than her sister? 7. The poorest³ woman in the town lives there.

1 arbre (*maso.*), 2 haut, 3 pauvre. PRON. 1 ahr-br, 2 hoh, 3 poh-vr.

56. Learn the following words :

good, bon better, meilleur the best, le meilleur
less, moins the least, le moins as...as, aussi...que so...as, si...que
PRON.—may'e-ye, mo'ang, ler mo'ang, oh-se...ker, se...ker.

She is LESS pretty than her sister.	Elle est moins jolie que sa sœur.
This lady is THE LEAST polite.	Cette dame est la moins polie.
He is AS tall AS you.	Il est aussi grand que vous.
These pictures are not so beautiful AS yours.	Ces tableaux ne sont pas si beaux que les vôtres.

EXERCISE V.

1. My watch is as good as his. 2. He is less active¹ than his brother. 3. This soldier is the best in the regiment.² 4. My hands are not so small as yours. 5. Her ring is the least beautiful. 6. His bag is the largest. 7. Here is the highest tree in the garden. 8. Is he not the best man in the world³? 9. Are not these apples better than yours? 10. My radio set⁴ is as good as his. 11. He has received less than ten francs to-day. 12. I gave her more than eight postage-stamps.

1 actif, 2 régiment, 3 monde (*maso.*), 4 appareil [de radio-phonie] (*maso.*). PRON.—1 ähk-teef, 2 reh-she-mahng, 3 mongd, 4 äh-päh-ray'e [der räh-de-o-fonn-ee].

† Forms like LARGEST, MOST INDUSTRIOUS, are called Superlatives.

* plus, le plus before an Adjective do not alter its position (Pars. 40, 53).

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Quels sont les nombres ordinaux ¹ ? Ce ² sont les suivants ³ :	Which are the ordinal numbers ? They are the following :
Le premier, ⁴ le second, ⁵	The first, the second,
le troisième ⁶ , le quatrième,	the third, the fourth,
le cinquième, le sixième,	the fifth, the sixth,
le septième, ⁷ le huitième,	the seventh, the eighth,
le neuvième, le dixième,	the ninth, the tenth,
le onzième, le vingtième,	the eleventh, the twentieth,
le vingt ⁸ et unième, ⁸ etc.	the twenty-first, etc.

1 or-de-noh ; 2 ser ; 3 swe-valing ; 4 ler prer-me-ch ; 5 ler s'gong or ser-gong ; 6 tro'ah-ze-ame ; 7 sett-c-ame ; 8 vang t'eh-EE-ne-ame.

The ORDINAL NUMBERS are formed from the cardinal numbers by adding *ième* ; if the cardinal number ends in *e*, the *e* is omitted in adding *ième*.

1st and 2nd are irregular (2nd has also a regular form), and 5th and 9th slightly change the spelling.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

110.

1. En mil huit cent quatre-vingt-quatorze. 2. Nous avons rencontré deux cents soldats. 3. Nous sommes à la page trois cent de ce livre. 4. Un million cinq cent mille francs. 5. En quinze cent. 6. Vous a-t-il apporté un nouveau livre ? 7. Votre jardin n'est pas si grand que le nôtre. 8. Mes bagues sont aussi jolies que les siennes. 9. Nous avons vu plus de (than) quinze cents soldats. 10. En mil huit cent.

111.

1. handsomer ; 2. older ; 3. the youngest (fem.) ; 4. warmer ; 5. colder ; 6. the most beautiful (fem. plur.) ; 7. more polite ; 8. the best (masc. sing.), the best (fem. sing.), the best (masc. plur.), the best (fem. plur.) ; 9. the richest ; 10. higher ; 11. larger ; 12. worse=more bad (fem.).

1. the best house ; 2. their new school ; 3. the oldest tree ; 4. the vainest girl ; 5. the prettiest garden ; 6. the blackest ink ; 7. our old dog ; 8. this man is stouter ; 9. her hands are smaller ; 10. your rooms are nicer ; 11. they are the richest.

112.

1. She is as vain as her sister. 2. He is less rich than his friend. 3. My coffee is as hot as yours. 4. Our tea is not so good as theirs. 5. Your niece is the most beautiful girl in the room. 6. The oldest women in the town are here. 7. This boy is the youngest in the family (famille). 8. The coldest day in the month. 9. You have read more than twelve pages.

THIRTEENTH LESSON.

57. The **FUTURE** of ALL VERBS is formed by adding to the **INFINITIVE** the following terminations :

ai, as, a, ons, ez, ont (same terminations as in **j'ai, tu as**, etc., see page 6)

I shall give	je donnerai	we shall give	nous donnerons
thou wilt give	tu donneras	you will give	vous donnerez
he will give	il donnera	they will give	ils donneront

PRON. *sher donn-er-eh, tee donn-er-rah, ill donn-er-rah ;
noo donn-er-ong, voo donn-er-reh, ill donn-er-ong.*

The final **e** of **re** Verbs is omitted when adding these terminations ;

avoir adds them to **aur**, and **être** to **ser** ; **as**,

I shall sell	je vendrai	I shall finish	je finirai
I shall have	j'aurai	I shall be	je serai

PRON.—*sher vahng-dreh, shoh-reh, sher fe-ne-reh, sher ser-reh or s'reh.*

QUESTIONS and **NEGATIONS** are formed as in the other Tenses :

will he speak ?	parlera-t-il ?	they will not have	ils n'auront pas
shall we finish ?	finirons-nous ?	will she not be ?	ne sera-t-elle pas ?

EXERCISE I.

1. He will be here to-morrow.¹
2. We shall be there.²
3. I shall speak to his father.
4. He will sell his house.
5. Will you have (the) time³ to-morrow ?
6. We shall finish our lessons⁴ to-day.
7. They will reply to our letter by return of (the) post.
8. Will you not punish your dog ?
9. I shall not give the money to the man.
10. Where will they live ?
11. Will they not close the door ?
12. She will choose this colour.

1 *demain*, 2 *là*, 3 *temps*, 4 *leçon* (*fem.*).

PRON.—1 *der-mang*, 2 *läh*, 3 *tahng*, 4 *ler-song*.

EXERCISE II.

1. I shall speak to him to-morrow.
2. We shall give the parcel back to them.
3. He will not finish it before¹ this evening.
4. Will they not invite us to the concert ?
5. They will not reply to her.
6. Will she not expect you ?
7. You will have it.
8. We shall not find him at² home.²
9. Will they not accept it ?
10. She will bring you the things.³

1 *avant*, 2 *à la maison*, 3 *chose*. 1 *äh-vahng*, 2 *äh läh may-zong*, 3 *shohz*.

Students wanting more Exercises on the **FUTURE** should next go through the **Additional Exercises**.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

C'est aujourd'hui le premier (1 ^{er}) mars, n'est-ce pas ?	To-day is the first of* March, is it not ?
Quel jour était-il ici ?	On* what day was he here ?
Il était ici lundi.	He was here on Monday.
Quand lui avez-vous écrit ?	When did you write to him ?
Le 15 (quinze†) septembre.	On the 15th of September.
Quand l'avez-vous vu ?	When did you see him ?
Vendredi, le 2 (deux) juin.	On Friday, the 2nd of June.
Quel jour de la semaine est-ce ?	What day of the week is this ?
Lundi, le 25 (vingt-cinq) mai.	Monday, the 25th of May.

* of and on are not translated before DAYS, MONTHS and DATES.

† In dates, TWO, THREE, etc., are used instead of 2nd, 3rd, etc., the 1st (*le premier*) being the only exception.—It is not customary to begin names of days and months with a capital letter in French.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

113.

1. Je ne serai pas, ne seras-tu pas ? il ne sera pas ; 2. ne serons-nous pas ? vous ne serez pas, ne seront-elles pas ? 3. n'aurai-je pas ? or est-ce que je n'aurai pas ? tu n'auras pas, n'aura-t-elle pas ? 4. nous n'aurons pas, n'aurez-vous pas ? ils n'auront pas.

1. I shall be, wilt thou be ? he will not be, will she not be ? 2. We shall be, will you not be ? they will not be, will they (fem.) be ? 3. I shall not have, thou wilt have, will he have ? she will not have ; 4. shall we have ? you will not have, will they have ? they will have.

114.

1. ne parlerai-je pas ? ne vendras-tu pas ? ne finira-t-il pas ? 2. nous ne parlerons pas, vous ne vendrez pas, ils ne finiront pas ; 3. je donnerai, tu oublieras, il n'invitera pas ; 4. nous demeurerons, vous apporterez, ils fermeront ; 5. n'attendrons-nous pas ? vous ne descendrez pas, n'entendront-ils pas ? 6. ne punirai-je pas ? or est-ce que je ne punirai pas ? tu ne rempliras pas, choisira-t-elle ?

1. I shall give, wilt thou copy ? he will not pass ; 2. shall we sing ? will you not carry ? they will not forget ; 3. I shall not reply, thou wilt not lose ; will he not give back ? 4. we shall not expect, will you not hear ?

115.

1. I shall have it. 2. You will not be there. 3. Will she not pay us ? 4. They will not find you. 5. We shall not cut them. 6. Will they (fem.) not expect him ? 7. We shall finish the pictures before the evening. 8. Will you not reply to their letter ? 9. They will not obey (to) your friend. 10. We shall not finish before ten o'clock. 11. Will he sell his ring ?

58. The IMPERATIVE is the same as the PRESENT, except that the Pronouns **VOUS, nous, tu** are omitted, thus :

SPEAK, parlez	DO NOT SPEAK, ne parlez pas
SELL, vendez	DO NOT SELL, ne vendez pas
let us speak, parlons	do not let us speak, ne parlons pas
let us finish, finissons	do not let us finish, ne finissons pas
speak (thou), parle*	do not sell (thou), ne vends pas
	finish (thou), finis

* The final **s** of **er** Verbs is omitted in the Imperative Singular.

The Imperative of (to) **HAVE** and (to) **BE** is irregular, thus :

have ayez	let us have ayons	have (thou) aie
be soyez	let us be soyons	be (thou) sois

The Imperative has only the above forms; 'let him speak,' 'let them speak,' are rendered by the Subjunctive Present,—see Lesson 26.

EXERCISE III.

1. Do not speak to the waiter. 2. Reply to his letter by return (of post). 3. Let-us-invite our neighbours. 4. Fill the glasses. 5. Do not wait for the train. 6. Look-at these pictures; are they not pretty? 7. Do not punish the little boy. 8. Don't sell your books. 9. Shut the window, if you please. 10. Do not spend more than five francs. 11. Cut some bread, if you please. 12. Do not bring your umbrella.

59. WHAT? WHICH? are translated **quel?** etc., if followed by the Verb **TO BE** and a Noun (see also paragraphs 34 and 39); as,

What is your OPINION?	Quelle est votre OPINION?
Which are their FRIENDS?	Quels sont leurs AMIS?
What will be the PRICE?	Quel sera le PRIX?

60. WHICH? WHICH ONE (or ONES)? followed by **OF** are translated **THE WHICH** (**lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles**):

WHICH (ONE) of these ladies?	Laquelle de ces dames?
WHICH (ONES) of these men sing?	Lesquels de ces hommes chantent?

EXERCISE IV.

1. What will be his position¹? 2. What will be their expenses²? 3. What is her name? 4. Which is your house? 5. Which are your friends? 6. What are their addresses? 7. Which is his sister? 8. What are your ideas³? 9. Which of these soldiers have gained⁴ the prizes⁵? 10. Which of your daughters is singing? 11. Which of the books is there?

1 position, 2 dépense, 3 idée, 4 to gain, gagner, 5 prix.

PRON.—1 po-zee-se-ong, 2 deh-pahngss, 3 e-deh, 4 gähn-yeh, 5 pree.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

L'entendez-vous sonner ?	Do you hear it striking ?
Oui, il sonne neuf heures.*	Yes, it is striking nine o'clock.
Non, c'est quatre heures.	No, that is four o'clock.
N'est-ce pas deux heures ?	Is that not two o'clock ?
Non, il est déjà trois heures.	No, it is already three o'clock.
avoir faim, ¹ avoir soif. ²	(to) be hungry, (to) be thirsty.
N'ont-ils pas faim ?	Are they not hungry ?
Si, et ils ont soif aussi.	Yes, and they are thirsty too.
Vous aurez soif dans une heure,	You will be thirsty in an hour,
mais vous n'aurez pas faim.	but you will not be hungry.

*or neuf heures sonnent (pron. : *ner v'er sonn*). 1 *fam* ; 2 *so'ähf*.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

116.

1. Qui nous invitera ? 2. Quo lui répondrez-vous ? 3. Ils demeureront à Paris à l'avenir (at the future=in future). 4. Où nous attendrez-vous ? 5. Ne sera-t-elle pas trop fatiguée ? 6. Nous aurons plus de temps demain. 7. Choisirez-vous ma couleur ou la sienne ? 8. Elle sera ici dans cinq minutes.

117.

1. Fermez la porte. 2. Ouvrez (open) la fenêtre. 3. N'attendons pas. 4. Ne dépensez pas tout (all) votre argent. 5. Ne perdez pas la lettre. 6. Ne fumez pas dans la chambre. 7. Ayez la bonté.¹ 8. Soyez² le bienvenu.² 9. Ne soyez pas en³ retard.³ 10. N'ayez pas peur.⁴ 11. Soyons prêts.⁵ 12. Ayons du courage. 13. Ayez pitié.

118.

1. Let us close the window. 2. Do not break the glass. 3. Reply to your father. 4. Do not sell this ring. 5. Let us wear our black hats. 6. Fill the lamp. 7. Wait for your friend. 8. Choose the day. 9. Let us finish the lesson. 10. Let us give back the books to the lady. 11. Do not pay more than ten francs. 12. Copy this letter, if you please.

119.

1. What is your name ? 2. Which is your house ? 3. Which are your letters ? 4. What is the date ? 5. What are your expenses ? 6. What will be my position ? 7. Which is the street where he lives ? 8. Which are your gloves ? 9. Which of your friends ? 10. Which of these letters ? 11. Which (plural) of these ladies ? 12. Which (plural) of these gentlemen ? 13. Which of those soldiers has won ? 14. Which of these ladies is singing ? 15. Which of those men are winning ?

1 kindness ; 2 be the (=you are) welcome ; 3 in delay=late ; 4 fear ; 5 ready.

FOURTEENTH LESSON.

61. The **CONDITIONAL** of ALL VERBS is formed by changing the Terminations of the **FUTURE** to

ais, ais, ait ; ions, iez, aient.

The Stems of the Future and Conditional are therefore always the same.

I should give	je donnerais	we should give	nous donnerions
thou wouldst give	tu donnerais	you would give	vous donneriez
he would give	il donnerait	they would give	ils donneraient

PRON.—**sh**er donn-er-ray, **tEE** donn-er-ray, **ill** donn-er-ray ;
noo donn-er-re-ong, **voo** donn-er-re-eh, **ill** donn-er-ray.

QUESTIONS and **NEGATIONS** are formed in the usual way :

he would not be	il ne serait pas	would he not sell ?	ne vendrait-il pas ?
would they have ?	auraient-ils ?	should we finish ?	finirions-nous ?

EXERCISE I.

1. We should forget his name. 2. He would be there in¹ time.¹ 3. I should not light the gas. 4. They would not lose the way. 5. Would you finish your work² before³ the evening⁴ ? 6. They would not have the time. 7. She would be alone.⁵ 8. We should break the window. 9. They would not be at⁶ home.⁶ 10. Would you have knocked⁷ at the door ?

1 à temps, 2 travail, 3 avant, 4 soir, 5 seul, 6 à la maison, 7 frapper.

PRON.—1 äh tahng, 2 träh-vah'e, 3 äh-vahng, 4 so'ahr, 5 serl, 6 äh läh may-zong, 7 fräh-neh.

62. WHO, WHOM, WHICH, THAT, when referring to a preceding word, are called **RELATIVE PRONOUNS** ; thus,

Subject.—WHO, WHICH, THAT **qui**

Object.—WHOM, WHICH, THAT **que** (**qu'** before a Vowel)

qui is used if the Verb comes immediately after these words in English ;

que is used if there is another word between. PRON.—kee, ker.

EXERCISE II.

1. The lady who spoke to you is my niece. 2. The gentleman whom you saw¹ yesterday² is her uncle. 3. The house that he sold to you is very good. 4. The letter which is on the table is for your friend. 5. The newspapers that are here are French. 6. The bird that is in this cage³ does not sing. 7. The pens which we have are very bad.

1=have seen, vu, 2 hier, 3 cage. PRON.—1 vEE, 2 e-air, 3 lähsh.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

avoir raison, ¹ tort, ¹ peur, ² honte, ²	(to) be right, wrong, afraid,
chaud, ³ froid. ³	ashamed, warm, cold.
Qui a raison ?	Who is right ?
Vous avez tort.	You are wrong.
N'a-t-il pas froid ?	Is he not cold ?
Non, au contraire, ⁴ il a chaud.	No, on the contrary, he is warm.
J'aurais honte.	I should be ashamed.
N'aura-t-elle pas peur ?	Will she not be afraid ?
Les dames auraient froid.	The ladies would be cold.

1 ray-zong (reason), tor ; 2 per, hongt (fear, shame) ; 3 shoh, fro'äh ;
4 kong-trair.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

120.

1. je ne serais pas ; ne serais-tu pas ? il ne serait pas ; 2. ne serions-nous pas ? vous ne seriez pas, ne seraient-ils pas ? 3. n'aurais-je pas ? or est-ce que je n'aurais pas ? tu n'aurais pas, n'aurait-elle pas ? 4. nous n'aurions pas, n'auriez-vous pas ? ils n'auraient pas.

1. I should be, wouldst thou be ? he would not be, would she not be ? 2. we should be, would you not be ? they would not be, would they (fem.) be ? 3. I should not have, thou wouldst have, would he have ? she would not have ; 4. should we have ? you would not have, would they have ?

121.

1. ne donnerais-je pas ? tu ne donnerais pas, ne finirait-il pas ? 2. nous ne fumerions pas, ne perdriez-vous pas ? elles n'obéiraient pas ; 3. je ne donnerais pas, ne rencontrerais-tu pas ? elle remplirait ; 4. descendrions-nous ? vous ne rendriez pas ; ne fermenteraient-ils pas ?

1. I should carry, wouldst thou light ? he would not find, would she not copy ? 2. we should spend, would you meet, they would not invite, would they (fem.) not speak ? 3. I should not obey, would he choose ? she would not punish ; 4. we should not sell, would you wait ? they would give back, would they not reply ?

122.

1. l'oiseau qui chante ; 2. l'homme qui parle ; 3. les livres que vous avez ; 4. les hommes qui fument ; 5. l'argent qu'il dépense ; 6. les tableaux que vous regardez ; 7. le train qu'il attend ; 8. les enfants qui n'obéissent pas.

1. the boy who is singing ; 2. the prices which you pay ; 3. the colour that you are choosing ; 4. the books which you are giving back ; 5. the work that we are finishing ; 6. the books which are here ; 7. the men who are selling ; 8. the neighbours who are living there.

63. WHOM, WHICH, THAT, may be omitted in English (when Object), but must always be expressed in French ; as,

The books you are looking for (<i>or</i> THAT you are looking for) are here.	Les livres que vous cherchez sont ici.
The pipe he is smoking (<i>or</i> WHICH he is smoking) is very large.	La pipe qu' il fume est très grande.

EXERCISE III.

1. The man you saw is there. 2. The boys you meet are my nephews. 3. The horses they are selling are very old. 4. The pictures we are looking at are very pretty. 5. The shoes they are selling are good. 6. The things we shall return to them are on the table.

The following Rule is of no great importance to beginners.

64. The PAST PARTICIPLE always takes the same Gender and Number as its object when it FOLLOWS the Object in French. This occurs in three kinds of sentences :

(a) In Questions beginning with WHICH, WHAT, followed by a Noun.

WHICH HOUSE have you bought ?	QUELLE MAISON avez-vous achetée ?
WHAT PICTURES did he sell ?	QUELS TABLEAUX a-t-il vendus ?
WHICH LADIES did they meet ?	QUELLES DAMES ont-ils rencontrées ?

(b) After the Relative Pronoun **que** (*qu'*).

the lamp that I lighted	la lampe QUE j'ai allumée
the boys WHOM you saw	les garçons QUE vous avez vus
the letters WHICH they lost	les lettres QU' ils ont perdues

(c) After the Personal Pronouns given in paragraph 42, unless they mean : TO me, TO us, TO him, etc.

We met HER in the street.	Nous l'avons rencontrée dans la rue.
Did they not expect YOU (m. plur.) ?	Nc VOUS ont-ils pas attendus ?
I did not see YOU (fem. sing.).	Je ne VOUS ai pas vus.
Did you not lose THEM ? (=pens)	Ne LES avez-vous pas perdues ?
She saw US (masc.) yesterday.	Elle NOUS a vus hier.
BUT ;—He gave (<i>to</i>) us the money.	Il nous a donné l'argent.

In the above examples, the Object is printed in SMALL CAPITALS.

EXERCISE IV.

1. Which page have you read ? 2. I have found the postage stamps (that) you lost. 3. The postman brought three letters for you ; have you received them ? 4. What animals did you see ? 5. Is the water which he brought you warm ? 6. His sister is very pretty ; have you not seen her ?

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Quel âge ¹ avez-vous ?	How old are you ?
J'ai vingt ² ans. ²	I am twenty (years old).
Quel âge a son fils ³ ? (or Quel âge son fils a-t-il ?)	How old is his son ?
Il a dix ans.	He is ten (years old).
Quel est votre âge ?	What is your age ?
Je suis âgé ⁴ de ⁴ quarante ans.	I am forty years old.
Quel est l'âge de votre fille ?	What is the age of your daughter ?
Elle est âgée de dix ans.	She is ten years old.

1 ahsh ; 2 vang t'ahng ; 3 fiss ; 4 ah-sheh der.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

123.

1. Garçon, apportez à cette dame une tasse de café. 2. Pourquoi n'avez-vous pas vendu votre maison ? 3. Mes dépenses sont trop grandes. 4. Voilà une bonne idée. 5. Il a une très belle position. 6. N'avez-vous pas perdu votre parapluie ? 7. Serez-vous à temps à la gare ? 8. Je lui parlerai demain.

124.

1. Do not speak to these boys. 2. Let us give some money to the woman. 3. Will you wait for me ? 4. They do not reply to our letters. 5. Why will you not finish your lessons to-day ? 6. Which one of these books will you choose ? 7. Is your brother as tall as you ? 8. These birds do not sing so well (bien) as yours. 9. She has gained more than three prizes.

125.

1. Quelles dames avez-vous invitées ? 2. Voici vos plumes ; je les ai trouvées sur la table. 3. Les garçons que vous avez choisis demeurent dans cette rue. 4. Quels noms avez-vous vus sur le papier ? 5. Voilà la dame que nous avons rencontrée hier.

6. I should speak to her. 7. They would not wait for us. 8. Would you finish it before to-morrow ? 9. They would not be there. 10. I shall not have (the) time to-morrow, 11. Do not wait for us more than an hour.

126.

1. Où est l'argent que vous avez trouvé ? 2. Voici les chaises que j'ai achetées. 3. Où sont les lettres qu'elle a reçues ? 4. L'oiseau qui chante est dans la cage. 5. Les échantillons qu'il nous a envoyés sont très jolis. 6. Les romans qu'elle a lus sont très intéressants. 7. La bague qu'il nous a vendue est très jolie.

8. The river which we saw is very large. 9. The trees which are in the garden are very high. 10. The wine you bought is very good. 11. The gentleman who is speaking is German. 12. The workmen who are in your house are very active. 13. There is the umbrella I lost yesterday.

FIFTEENTH LESSON.

65. The IMPERFECT (or PAST) TENSE of ALL VERBS is formed by adding to the STEM : **ais, ais, ait ; ions, iez, aient.**

I was giving	je donnais	we were giving	nous donnions
thou wast giving	tu donnais	you were giving	vous donniez
he was giving	il donnait	they were giving	ils donnaient

PRON.—donn-ay, donn-ay, donn-ay ; donn-e-ong, donn-e-eh, donn-ay.

Verbs ending in **ir** take **iss** before the above terminations ; **avoir** adds them to **av**, and **être** to **ét**. Examples :

I was selling	je vendais	I was finishing	je finissais
I had	j'avais	I was	j'étais

PRON.—shér vahng-day, sháh-vay, shér fe-niss-ay, sheh-tay.

EXERCISE I. (on the Imperfect).

1. I was-giving a lesson to-him. 2. She had* two sisters.
3. They were* alone.¹ 4. She was finishing the dress² for that lady. 5. They were-listening-to³ the music.⁴ 6. We were-waiting-for the train. 7. She was speaking to us. 8. You were smoking a cigar. 9. They had* the samples. 10. We were* at home. 11. I was filling the lamp.

1 seul, 2 robe, 3 écouter, 4 musique. 1 serl, 2 rob, 3 eh-koo-teh, 4 mee-zick.

66. The Imperfect Tense means 'I used to give, he used to sell,' etc., as well as 'I was giving, he was selling.' Therefore, 'I gave, he sold,' etc., when meaning 'I used to give, he used to sell, etc., must be rendered by the IMPERFECT Tense.

She used to speak to me.	Elle me parlait.
They (fem.) used to obey us.	Elles nous obéissaient.
Were you not listening to them ?	Né les écoutiez-vous pas ?
He smoked too much formerly.	Il fumait trop autrefois.

EXERCISE II. (on the Imperfect).

1. They used to play¹ every day. 2. She was tearing² the papers. 3. We used to study³ (the) French⁴ together.⁵ 4. They were walking⁶ to the market⁷ with their baskets.⁸ 5. Were they not playing at (-the) cards⁹ yesterday evening ? 6. She won¹⁰ always, and I lost all¹¹ my money. 7. He was finishing my coat. 8. They used not to succeed¹² in these things. 9. They were* not here. 10. We had* a little house. 11. Was* she not very pretty ? 12. They had* not (the) time.

1 jouer, 2 déchirer, 3 étudier, 4 ensemble, 5 marcher, 6 marché, 7 panier, 8 cartes, 9 gagner, 10 tout, 11 réussir. PRON.—1 shoo-eh, 2 deh-shee-reh, 3 eh-TEE-de-eh, 4 ahng-sahng-bl, 5 mahr-sheh, 6 mahr-sheh, 7 päh-ne-eh. 8 kahrt, 9 gähn-yeh, 10 too, 11 reh-EE-seer.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Ma sœur a ¹ trente ans.	My sister is thirty years old.
Il n'avait pas peur.	He was not afraid.
Nous avions tort.	We were wrong.
De quoi parlait-elle ?	What was she speaking of ?
Vous avez bien ² raison.	You are quite (=well) right.
Combien ³ a-t-il dépensé ?	How much has he spent ?
Il a dépensé tout son argent.	He has spent all his money.
A qui l'ont-ils montré ?	Whom have they shown it to ?
Il est arrivé hier matin.	He (is) arrived yesterday morn-
Nous ne serions pas à temps.	We should not be in time. [ing.
Qu'a-t-il dit cette fois ?	What did he say this time ⁴ ?

1 *or* est âgée de ; 2 *be-ang* ; 3 *kong-be-ang* ; 4 =occasion.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

127.

1. N'avais-je pas ? *or* est-ce que je n'avais pas ? tu n'avais pas, n'avait-il pas ? 2. nous n'avions pas, n'aviez-vous pas ? elles n'avaient pas ; 3. je n'étais pas, étais-tu ? elle n'était pas ; 4. n'étaient-nous pas ? vous étiez, ils n'étaient pas.

1. I had,* hadst thou ? he had not ; 2. we had, had you ? had they (fem.) not ? 3. I was not, wast thou ? was she not ? 4. we were not, were you not ? they were not.

128.

1. N'oubliais-je pas ? *or* est-ce que je n'oubliais pas ? tu ne descendais pas, ne réussissait-il pas ? 2. nous chantions, ne correspondiez-vous pas ? ils ne réussissaient pas.

1. I was tearing, wast thou not waiting for ? he was finishing ; 2. we were copying ; were you not succeeding ? they used-to-descend ; 3. I used-to-lend ; she did not succeed† ; did they not correspond† ? 4. we were-looking-at, were you not playing ? they (fem.) were not succeeding.

129.

1. Qui déchirait ces lettres ? 2. Ils ne réussissaient pas. 3. Le panier n'était pas là. 4. Ils marchaient ensemble tout le temps. 5. Nous copions‡ la liste. 6. N'avaient-ils pas perdu le chemin ? 7. Elle était seule à la maison. 8. Elles étaient très fatiguées.

1. She was filling the basket with (de) flowers. 2. Were you at the market yesterday ? 3. They used always to lose. 4. Were they not playing together ? 5. She used to study more than you. 6. Had he not succeeded ? 7. The ladies were speaking to the gentlemen. 8. Were they not corresponding with their friends ? 9. He used to spend all his money. 10. They were finishing our coats.

* HAD, WAS, WERE, are generally rendered by the Imperfect, and must be so rendered in this exercise. † To be translated by the Imperfect. ‡ The first *i* belongs to the Stem, the second *i* to the Termination.

67. WHICH and WHOM after a PREPOSITION (see paragraph 35) are translated by **THE WHICH**, thus :

lequel, laquelle, lesquels, lesquelles. PRON.—*ler-kell*, etc.

After a Preposition, **WHOM** can also be rendered by **qui**.

WHOM and **WHICH** are in such cases **RELATIVE Pronouns**, as they do not ask a question.

the house IN WHICH we live	la maison dans laquelle nous demeurons
the man WITH WHOM she was dancing	l'homme avec lequel (or <i>avec qui</i>) elle dansait

EXERCISE III.

1. The book in which he was studying is a French grammar.¹ 2. The train by which she arrives² is always late. 3. The lady with whom we were dancing⁴ yesterday is not here. 4. The girls for whom you bought the boots. 5. The envelope⁵ on which he wrote the address. 6. The man by⁶ whom he sent the money.

1 *grammaire*, 2 *arriver*, 3 *en retard*, 4 *danser*, 5 *enveloppe*, 6 *par*.

PRON.—1 *gräh-mair*, 2 *ähr-rec-veh*, 3 *ahng rer-tahr*, 4 *dahng-seh*, 5 *ahng-ver-lop*, 6 *pähr*.

68. OF WHOM, OF WHICH (when Relative) are often translated by **dont** instead of **de qui**, or **duquel**, * **de laquelle, desquels**,* etc.

the ladies OF WHOM you were speak- ing	les dames dont (or <i>de qui</i> or <i>des- quelles</i>) vous parliez
the book OF WHICH he forgot the title	le livre dont il a oublié le titre
the samples OF WHICH he was speaking	les échantillons dont il parlait

*All such words beginning with **le** or **les** are contracted with **de** and **à** as usual,—see paragraphs 22, 25.

EXERCISE IV.

1. Did you let¹ the rooms of which we were speaking? 2. Where is the list² from which he was copying the names³? 3. There is the man to whom I gave it. 4. The fire of which we heard⁴ was very serious.⁵ 5. We were speaking of our garden and not⁶ of yours. 6. We lent it to our friends and not⁶ to theirs. 7. To which one of these men did you send it? 8. Of which (plur.) of these girls were you speaking? 9. Did you give it to our waiter or to his? 10. Have they heard⁷ it from my servant⁸ or from hers?

1 *louer*, 2 *liste*, 3 *nom*, 4=have heard speak, 5 *sérieux*, 6 *non* or *non pas*, 7=learned, appris, 8 *domestique* (masc. or fem.). PRON.—1 *loo-eh*, 2 *list*, 3 *nong*, 5 *seh-re-er*, 6 *nong*, *nong päh*, 7 *äh-pree*, 8 *do-mess-tick*.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Il arrivera le dix-huit août.	He will arrive (on*) the 18th (of*) August.
Quel jour arriverons-nous ?	What day shall we arrive ?
Vendredi, le seize novembre.	(On) Friday, Nov. 16th.
Avez-vous soif ?	Are you thirsty ?
Non, mais j'ai faim.	No, but I am hungry.
Et moi aussi.	So am I (=and I also).
N'ont-ils pas faim ?	Are they not hungry ?
Dix heures sonnaient.	Ten o'clock was striking.
Savez-vous quelle heure il est ?	Do you know what time it is ?

* see Note on page 57.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

130.

1. Pourquoi déchiriez-vous la robe ? 2. Il ne nous écoutait pas. 3. Il gagne toujours aux cartes. 4. Les soldats marchaient le long de (along) cette rue. 5. Ils ne réussiront pas. 6. Avez-vous acheté ce panier de pommes au marché ? 7. Étudions nos leçons ensemble. 8. Jouiez-vous dans le jardin ?

131.

1. the room in which ; 2. the man to whom ; 3. the soldiers of whom ; 4. the chairs on which ; 5. the ladies to whom ; 6. the fire at which ; 7. the servants of whom ; 8. the streets through (=by) which ; 9. the letter in which ; 10. the uncle of whom ; 11. the basket in which ; 12. the friend to whom.

132.

I HAD, I WAS, etc., are generally translated by j'avais and j'étais, etc., not by the Perfect Tense (I HAVE HAD, I HAVE BEEN, etc.).

1. she had not, I was not, were you ? 2. they were not, had you ? was she not ? 3. had I not ? he was not ; were we not ? 4. was I ? had they not ? you were not ; 5. I had, thou wast, had she ? it was not ; 6. we were, had you ? they (fem.) were not.

133.

1. Have you read the book of which we were speaking ? 2. Who is the gentleman to whom you have sent it ? 3. Where are the baskets in which we brought them ? 4. There is the lady to whom I lent my dictionary, 5. To which one of these boys did you give it ? 6. Of which (plur.) of these flowers were you speaking ? 7. We sent the address to his brother and to yours. 8. Have you received it from our friends or from theirs ? 9. Here is the grammar of which I was speaking.

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISES ON LESSONS 12⁵ TO 15.

1.

1. Here is a fine street. 2. She wears a black¹ hat. 3. There are your husband and your brother. 4. What a small foot she has! 5. Have you any matches? 6. Yes, but I have not any tobacco.² 7. Is he as industrious³ as you? 8. He is much more active than we. 9. This officer is the tallest in his regiment. 10. We have bought more than six pounds⁴ of ice.⁵ 11. She is as pretty as her sister. 12. This lesson is less difficult⁶ than yours.

2.

1. I shall have finished in two hours. 2. He will be there before the evening. 3. We shall not have (the) time. 4. I shall speak to them. 5. They will not reply to our letter. 6. We shall be there to-morrow morning.⁷ 7. The ladies were absent. 8. Who will-wait-for him? 9. Where will you sell the postage-stamps? 10. I shall gain the first prize. 11. Speak more quickly.⁸ 12. Do not spend all your money.

3.

1. Were you quite⁹ alone? 2. Why did you not drink this water? 3. It was too hot. 4. Was this wine good? 5. Yes, it was very good. 6. They will not finish before nine o'clock. 7. We shall not reply to them. 8. You will tear it. 9. She will not accept it. 10. He did not reply to us. 11. We shall pay his account¹⁰ to-morrow. 12. She was-looking-for her friends.

4.

1. What was his name? 2. Which are our neighbours? 3. Which one of these dogs will you sell? 4. Do not speak so fast.⁸ 5. Shut the doors and (the) windows. 6. Do not finish the dress to-day. 7. Do not smoke here, if¹¹ you please.¹¹ 8. Which are your houses? 9. What will be the price? 10. Let us have (some) courage. 11. Have the kindness.¹² 12. Do not be late.¹³

5.

1. He answered by return of post. 2. They were-waiting-for him in this room. 3. I have not seen his handwriting. 4. Have you not forgotten our address? 5. We did not see the fire. 6. At what time did you receive the letter? 7. Why did she not give-back the money to-him? 8. There-is his daughter.

1 noir; 2 tabac; 3 travailleur or l'aborieux; 4 livre (fem.); 5 glace; 6 difficile; 7 matin; 8 vite; 9 tout; 10 compte (masc.); 11 s'il vous plaît; 12 bonté; 13 en retard (in delay). PRON.—1 no'âr; 2 tâh-bâh; 3 trâh-vah'e-yer, lâh-bo-re-er; 4 leevr; 5 glâhss; 6 diff-e-sill; 7 mäh-tang; 8 vitt; 9 too; 10 kongt; 11 sill voo play; 12 bong-teh; 13 ahng tr-tahr

RECAPITULATORY EXERCISES ON THE VARIOUS TENSES.

6.

1. I am, I was (Imperfect Tense), I shall be, I should be ; 2. is he ? was he ? will he be ? would he be ? 3. we are not, we were not, we shall not be, we should not be ; 4. are you not ? were you not ? will they not be ? would they not be ?

7.

1. she has, she had (Imperfect), she will have, she would have ; 2. have you ? had you ? will you have ? would you have ? 3. we have not, we had not, we shall not have, we should not have ; 4. have they not ? had they not ? will he not have ?

8.

1. we are copying, we were copying, we shall copy, we should copy ; 2. does he shut ? was he shutting ? will he shut ? would he shut ? would the servant shut ? 3. I do not find, I was not finding, I shall not find, I should not find ; 4. does that man work (=that man works he) ? was that man working ? will that man work ? would that man work ? 5. shut the door.

9.

1. he sells, he does not sell ; does he sell ? does he not sell ? 2. I was corresponding, I was not corresponding ; was I losing ? was I not losing ? 3. they will wait, they will not wait ; will they wait ? will they not wait ? 4. we should lose, we should not lose ; should we lose ? should we not lose ? 5. wait here ; do not wait.

10.

1. you are finishing, you were finishing, you will finish, you would finish ; 2. will she choose ? would she choose ? was she choosing ? is she choosing ? 3. they do not fill, they would not fill, the boys used not to obey ; will not the boys obey ? 4. fill the lamp ; do not fill it (fem.) ; 5. let us wait here ; do not lose it.

11.

1. she will not obey ; was she obeying ? would she not obey ? 2. I am filling ; the servant was not filling ; were you not finishing ? 3. they would not choose ; shall we not finish ? I do not choose ; 4. will he obey ? the boys were not obeying ; I am choosing ; would you finish ?

12.

1. She was copying a letter. 2. I shall copy the names. 3. What are you copying ? 4. We should not copy the list. 5. I am waiting for the train. 6. What was he selling ? 7. Will they not correspond with you ? 8. You would not lose it. 9. We shall finish it to-morrow.

SIXTEENTH LESSON.

69. The PRESENT PARTICIPLE is formed by adding **ant** to the STEM; Verbs ending in **ir** take **iss** before the **ant**; as,

giving, **donnant** | selling, **vendant** | finishing, **finissant**

IRREGULAR: having, **ayant** being, **étant**

PRON.—*donn-ahng, vahng-dahng, fe-niss-ahng, ay-yahng, eh-tahng.*

NOTE.—The INFINITIVE is used in French instead of the PRESENT PARTICIPLE after any Preposition, **en** (in, on, while) excepted; as,

WITHOUT PAYING it

AFTER speaking=after having spoken

BUT: WHILE SMOKING his pipe

ON MEETING their friends

sans le payer

après avoir parlé

en fumant sa pipe

en rencontrant leurs amis

EXERCISE I.

1. in speaking to his friend; 2. on returning the parcel; 3. in finishing the dress; 4. without replying to the letter; 5. after writing (translate: after having written); 6. I have the pleasure¹ of informing² you; 7. for having lost the money; 8. while looking-for the street; 9. without copying the letter; 10. in lighting the gas³; 11. having lost the way; 12. in obeying (to-)you; 13. for having sold; 14. on hearing the noise; 15. without studying his lessons.

1 plaisir, 2 informer, 3 gaz. PRON.—1 play-zeer, 2 ang-for-meh, 3 gahz.

70. THIS, THAT, not followed by a Noun, are translated thus:

THIS **ceci** (ser-se), THAT **cela** (ser-lah); **ça** (sah) is a contraction of **cela**, **ce** (or **c'** before a vowel) is generally used instead of **ceci** or **cela**, if connected with a tense of TO BE,—see paragraphs 74, 75.

What is the price of THIS?

Did you buy THAT?

THIS will be easy.

Is THAT not difficult?

Quel est le prix de ceci?

Avez-vous acheté cela?

Ce sera facile.

N'est-ce pas difficile?

EXERCISE II.

1. Give this to your brother. 2. That costs¹ more than six shillings.² 3. Why did you not choose that? 4. This is the best colour. 5. Was that not stupid³? 6. This is too dear.⁴ 7. That will be nice. 8. Do not show⁵ (to-)him this. 9. That is too good. 10. This smokes too-much.⁶ 11. Will that not be difficult? 12. This was not easy.

1 coûter, 2 schelling, 3 stupide, 4 cher, 5 montrer, 6 too much, trop.

PRON.—1 koo-teh, 2 sher-lang, 3 stEE-pid, 4 shair, 5 mong-treh, 6 tro.

71. The PAST DEFINITE* of Verbs ending in **er** is formed by adding to the Stem the terminations printed in thick type below :

I gave	je donnai	we gave	nous donnâmes
thou gavest	tu donnas	you gave	vous donnâtes
he gave	il donna	they gave	ils donnèrent

PRON.—donn-eh, donn-ah, donn-ah ; donn-ahm, donn-ah't, donn-air.

Note that the terminations of the Singular are like those of **j'ai, tu as, il a**.

* This Tense is rarely used in conversation, but is frequently met with in reading. Students should continue to translate the PAST by the PERFECT or IMPERFECT (see pars. 21 and 66), except in the three Exercises below.

EXERCISE III. (on the Past Definite).

1. he spoke ; 2. I did not copy ; 3. didst thou close ? 4. we accepted ; 5. did you forget ? 6. they cut ; 7. we found ; 8. they did not give ; 9. did you not meet ? 10. we closed the door ; 11. they did not pay the account ; 12. he looked-at me.

72. The PAST DEFINITE of Verbs ending in **re** and **ir** is formed by adding to the Stem **is, is, it ; imes, ites, irent**, thus :

I SOLD, etc.		I FINISHED, etc.	
je vendis	nous vendîmes	je finis	nous finîmes
tu vendis	vous vendîtes	tu finis	vous finîtes
il vendit	ils vendirent	il finit	ils finirent

PRON.—Sing. vahng-dee, fin-ee ; Plur. vahng-deem, vahng-deet, vahng-deer.

Note that the Terminations of the Singular are like those of the Present of Verbs in **ir** ; the terminations of the Plural are the same as those of Verbs in **er**, the vowel being changed into **i**.

EXERCISE IV. (on the Past Definite).

1. we finished ; 2. he did not sell ; 3. I obeyed ; 4. we lost ; 5. they replied ; 6. did you choose ? 7. she gave back ; 8. I filled ; 9. you descended ; 10. they did not succeed.

73. The PAST DEFINITES of **avoir** and **être** have the same terminations as the **re** and **ir** Verbs, except that **i** is changed into **u** :

I HAD, etc.		I WAS, etc.	
j'eus	nous eûmes	je fus	nous fûmes
tu eus	vous eûtes	tu fus	vous fûtes
il eut	ils eurent	il fut	ils furent

PRON.—shEE, tEE EE, ill EE ; noo z'EEM, voo z'EET, ill z'EER.

Singular : fEE ; Plural : fEEM, fEET, fEER.

EXERCISE V. (on the Past Definite).

1. I was ; 2. he had ; 3. we were ; 4. they had ; 5. they (fem.) were ; 6. we had ; 7. were you ? 8. hadst thou not ? 9. I had not ; 10. he was not ; 11. they were not ; 12. had they not ?

74. THIS, THAT, THESE and THOSE are all translated by **ce** (c') if connected with a tense of TO BE and a Noun or Pronoun; as,

THAT (*or* this) will be your room.

THESE (*or* those) are my friends.

Is THIS (*or* that) not your dog?

THAT (*or* this) was yours.

Ce sera votre chambre.

Ce sont mes amis.

N'est-ce pas votre chien?

C'était le vôtre.

PRON.—c'est, say; est-ce? *ess?* ce sont, *ser song*; sont-ce? *songss?* c'était, c'étaient, *seh-tay*; était-ce? *étaient-ce?* *eh-tace?*

EXERCISE VI.

1. This is my hat. 2. Is this your chair? 3. These are my gloves. 4. Those are not his horses. 5. Is this not your ticket? 6. Was that our music? 7. Will that be your place? 8. That was our regiment. 9. Is this not his shop¹? 10. Are those not their rings²? 11. What songs³ were those?

1 boutique, 2 bague, 3 chanson. PRON. 1 boo-teek, 2 bähg, 3 shahng-song.

75. IT is generally translated by **ce** unless referring to a Noun just mentioned (see par. 23). HE, SHE, THEY are also rendered by **ce** if used with the Verb TO BE and a Noun or Pronoun.

It is not easy.

Is HE a German?

THEY are Spaniards.

Ce n'est pas facile.

Est-ce un Allemand?

Ce sont des Espagnols.

PRON.—ähll-mahng, *ess-pähn-yol*.

EXERCISE VII.

1. It was her husband. 2. Are they your gloves? 3. It will not be his place. 4. It is good. 5. They are (some) Germans. 6. Is he a Spaniard? 7. Was it nice? 8. They are not (some) Frenchmen.

76. All the Pronouns mentioned in paragraph 42 follow a Verb in the Imperative, unless the Verb is in the Negative.

When following the Verb, these Pronouns are connected with it by a hyphen; and **me** and **te**, when following the Verb, are changed into **moi** and **toi**.

sell them

vendez-les

do not sell them

ne les vendez pas

accept it

acceptez-le

do not accept it

ne l'acceptez pas

speak to me

parlez-moi

do not speak to me

ne me parlez pas

EXERCISE VIII.

1. Give him the book. 2. Show us the way. 3. Lend them the money. 4. Return the letters to us. 5. Speak to me this evening. 6. Do not accept it. 7. Let us speak to them. 8. Do not give her the ring. 9. Do not sell them. 10. Reply to me. 11. Do not reply to them. 12. Do not forget us.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Que vous a-t-il dit ?	What did he say to you ?
Je n'ai pas compris sa question.	I did not understand his question.
Que lui avez-vous répondu ?	What did you answer him ?
Où l'avez-vous trouvé ? [livres.	Where did you find it ?
Je l'ai trouvé dans un de ces	I found it in one of these books.
Qui avez-vous rencontré ce	Whom did you meet this
matin ?	morning ?
C'était le mari de ma cousine. ²	It was my cousin's husband.
Pourquoi ne m'a-t-il pas écrit ?	Why has he not written to me ?

1 kong-pree ; 2 koo-zeen.

. . . ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

134.

1. En me regardant. 2. Ils ne nous répondirent pas. 3. En fumant sa pipe. 4. Après avoir mangé.¹ 5. Il arriva le soir. 6. En passant le couteau. 7. Il me donna deux schellings pour avoir trouvé son chien. 8. Il nous répondit sans tourner² la tête. 9. En remplissant son verre. 10. Les Français rendirent les navires.³ 11. Le roi visita la ville. 12. Nous avons le plaisir de vous informer.

1 eaten ; 2 (to) turn ; 3 ship.

135 (on the PAST DEFINITE).

1. she succeeded, did they succeed ? 2. we copied, did he not copy ? 3. I did not sell, you sold, did the man sell ? 4. you did not pass, the soldiers passed, did not the boy pass ? 5. did they have ? I had not ; 6. were you not ? we were, thou wast not ; 7. he gave, she replied, he did not obey ; 8. I had, I was, I closed, I gave back, I filled ; 9. they had, they were, they spoke, they lost, they chose.

136.

1. while choosing the colour ; 2. without cutting the string ; 3. not being in (=to) time ; 4. after having lighted the fire ; 5. Who gave you this ? 6. Do not lend him that. 7. That is not our opinion. 8. This will be very difficult without copying it. 9. It would be too late. 10. This will not cost much. 11. Are these your gloves ? 12. They are my neighbours. 13. Where are our hats ? They are not here. 14. That finishes well.

137.

1. Was it not his place ? 2. Were they your samples ? 3. This is not my handwriting. 4. Show it to your friend. 5. Do not give her the parcel. 6. Let us finish it. 7. Do not lose them. 8. Send it to this address. 9. Show me your ring. 10. Do not show him the pictures. 11. Do not forget me.

SEVENTEENTH LESSON.

IRREGULAR VERBS.

The Irregular Verbs are easily learnt, their Terminations (except sometimes in the Present Tense) being quite Regular. Example :

77. INFINITIVE : (to) SEE, **voir**

PRES. PARTICIPLE : seeing, **voyant** | PAST PARTICIPLE : seen, **vu**

PRES. TENSE : I see, etc., **je vois**, *etc. | PAST DEF. : I saw, etc., **je vis**, etc.

FUTURE : I shall see, etc., **je verrai**, etc.

PRON.—vo'ahr, vo'ah-yahng, **VEE**, sher vo'ah, **sher** vee, **sher** vair-eh.

*If the first person ends in **s**, the second also ends in **s**, and the third in **t**.

The above is all that need be learnt, if attention is paid to the three important rules given at the foot of this page.

FULL CONJUGATION FOR REFERENCE.

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	CONDITIONAL.
I see	I was seeing	I saw	I shall see	I should see
je vois	voyais	vis	verrai	verrais
tu vois	voyais	vis	verras	verrais
il voit	voyait	vit	verra	verrait
nous voyons†	voyions	vîmes	verrons	verrions
vous voyez†	voyiez	vîtes	verrez	verriez
ils voient	voyaient	virent	verront	verraient

IMPERATIVE : let us see, voyons ; see, voyez ; see (thou), vois.

†i is always changed to y before a sounded syllable.

EXERCISE I.

1. Do you see that man ? 2. I shall see you to-morrow.
 3. I saw him last¹ week.¹ 4. Have you seen (par. 64) them ?
 5. They saw (past def.) the steamer.² 6. They do not see us.
 7. On³ seeing that. 8. After having seen him. 9. We used-to-see them every day. 10. I should see them, if⁴ they were there.

1 la semaine dernière, 2 vapeur (masc.), 3 en, 4 si (s' before il or ils, si before elle). PRON. 1 lăh ser-manc dair-ne-air, 2 văh-per, 3 ahng, 4 se.

RULES FOR REFERENCE ONLY.

- I. The Terminations are always regular, except in the PRESENT TENSE.
 II. The Stems of the IMPERFECT, the IMPERATIVE, and the PLURAL of the PRESENT, are the same as that of the PRESENT PARTICIPLE.
 III. The Stems of the FUTURE and CONDITIONAL are always alike.
 • From these Rules it follows that the PARTICIPLES, the PRESENT TENSE, and the FUTURE and PAST DEFINITE Stems, are all that need be learnt.

78. THIS, THAT, meaning THIS ONE, THAT ONE, are translated thus :

THIS ONE	celui-ci	celle-ci	THESE	ceux-ci	celles-ci
THAT ONE	celui-là	celle-là	THOSE	ceux-là	celles-là

PRON.—scr-lwe-se, sell-se ; scr-lwe-lah, sell-lah ; ser-se, sell-se, etc.

These Pronouns always refer to a NOUN MENTIONED JUST PREVIOUSLY, with which they agree in Gender ; as,

This house and THAT.	Cette maison-ci et celle-là.
These horses or THOSE.	Ces chevaux-ci ou ceux-là.
Here are two watches ; will you have THIS ONE or THAT ONE ?	Voici deux montres ; voulez-vous celle-ci ou celle-là ?

79. -ci (here), -là (there) may be added to the Noun to make a distinction between THIS and THAT, THESE and THOSE.

THIS man and THAT woman	cet homme-ci et cette femme-là
THESE boys or THOSE girls	ces garçons-ci ou ces filles-là

EXERCISE II.

1. Did you buy these books or those ? 2. What is the price of these watches ? 3. These (f.) cost a hundred francs,¹ and those two hundred francs. 4. I did not find your key, but this one. 5. This bottle is full,² and that (one) is empty.³ 6. Here are several⁴ pieces⁵ of money ; these are English and those are French. 7. Will⁶ you have⁶ these gloves or those ?

1 franc, 2 plein, 3 vide, 4 plusieurs, 5 pièce, 6 voulez-vous ?

PRON. 1 frahng, 2 plang, 3 vœd, 4 pleë-ze-er, 4 pe-ess, 6 voo-leh voo ?

80. Expressions like 'his father's,' 'their friends,' must be translated by : that (or those) of his father, that (or those) of their friends.

My umbrella or MY BROTHER'S.

Mon parapluie ou celui de mon frère.

Your remarks and YOUR FRIENDS'.

Vos observations et celles de vos amis.

1. THE ONE is translated like THAT-ONE. 2. ci and là are left off before Relative Pronouns (paragraph 62), or before de meaning OF.

This lady and THE ONE who wrote.

Cette dame et celle qui a écrit.

These children and THOSE OF whom we were speaking.

Ces enfants et ceux de qui (or ceux dont) nous parlions.

EXERCISE III.

1. Is this your room or your sister's ? 2. He brought my gun and Henry's.¹ 3. We fetched² your umbrellas, but not (non) those gentlemen's. 4. Our garden is larger than our neighbour's. 5. These pictures are finer than those we saw yesterday. 6. Is this your carriage or your cousin's³ (fem.) ?

1 Henri, 2 chercher, 3 cousine. 1 hahng-re, 2 shair-sheh, 3 koo-zeen.

81. INFINITIVE : (to) READ, lire**PRES. PARTICIPLE :** reading, *lisant* | **PAST PARTICIPLE :** read, *lu***PRON.** leer, lee-zahng, LEE**PRES. TENSE :** Singular—I read, *je lis** Plural—we read, *nous lisons***Rule I.**—The Stem of the Plural of the Present is the same as that of the Present Participle.**IMPERFECT :** I was reading, *je lisais* | **PAST DEFINITE :** I read, *je lus***Rule II.**—The Stem of the Imperfect is the same as that of the Present Participle.**FUTURE :** I shall read, *je lirai***CONDITIONAL :** I should read, *je lirais***Rule III.**—The Future and Conditional have always the same stem.**IMPERATIVE :** read, *lisez*; let us read, *lisons* (Familiar Form : read, *lis*)**Rule IV.**—The Imperative is the same as the Present, without *vous*, *nous*, and *tu*.

The rules on page 74 are repeated here singly. It suffices to learn the part of the Verb printed in thick type, to conjugate the Verb in full, thus :

PRESENT.	IMPERFECT.	PAST DEFINITE.	FUTURE.	CONDITIONAL.
<i>je lis</i> *	<i>lisais</i>	<i>lus</i>	<i>lirai</i>	<i>lirais</i>
<i>tu lis</i>	<i>lisais</i>	<i>lus</i>	<i>liras</i>	<i>lirais</i>
<i>il lit</i>	<i>lisait</i>	<i>lut</i>	<i>lira</i>	<i>lirait</i>
<i>nous lisons</i>	<i>lisions</i>	<i>lûmes</i>	<i>lirons</i>	<i>lirions</i>
<i>vous lisez</i>	<i>lisiez</i>	<i>lûtes</i>	<i>lirez</i>	<i>liriez</i>
<i>ils lisent</i>	<i>lisaient</i>	<i>lurent</i>	<i>liront</i>	<i>liraient</i>

*If the first person ends in *s*, the second ends in *s*, and the third in *t*.**EXERCISE IV.**

1. Have you read this story¹? 2. Not² yet,² I am reading this one. 3. Will you read the one (that) I was reading? 4. Read this book or Henry's. 5. Let us read his letters and his uncle's. 6. In which book were you reading? 7. In the one which is on the table. 8. Would you read my answer³ or my friend's? 9. I shall read the one which is here. 10. These pens are better than those which he brought (par. 64).

1 histoire, 2 pas encore, 3 réponse.

PRON.—1 iss-to'ahr, 2 pah z'ahng-kor, 3 reh-pongss.**82. The Verbs formed from lire are conjugated in the same way :**(to) elect, *élire* (to) re-elect, *ré-élire* (to) read again, *relire***EXERCISE V.**

1. We shall elect a mayor.¹ 2. He was re-elected our member² of 'parliament.'² 3. I was reading the letter again. 4. We shall not read the story again. 5. Who has been elected? 6. On reading it again. 7. Without being elected.

1 maire, 2 député.

PRON.—1 mair, 2 deh-pee-teh.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Laquelle de ces montres est la meilleure ?	Which of these watches is the best ?
Celle que vous avez dans la main. [voulez-vous ?]	The one that you have in your (=the) hand. [you have ?]
Lesquelles de ces cigarettes	Which of these cigarettes will
Celles qui sont ici.	Those which are here.
À quelle heure avez-vous allumé les lampes ? [et demie.]	At what time did you light the lamps ?
Je pense qu'il était sept heures	I think it was half past seven.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

138.

1. Lequel de ces romans avez-vous lu ? Celui-ci ou celui-là ? 2. A-t-elle accepté votre cadeau¹ ou celui de votre cousin ? 3. N'a-t-il pas amené (brought) ses chiens et ceux de son voisin ? 4. Je vous verrai demain soir à huit heures un quart. 5. Ne l'oubliez pas, je vous attendrai. 1 cadeau, present, gift.

139.

1. I do not see, she did not see (past def.); 2. they used-to-see, let us see; 3. on seeing us, after having seen them (par. 64); 4. we shall see them, I should not see it; 5. we see them, they do not see us; 6. have you not seen her (par. 64)? do you see them? 7. we should see her, they saw (past. def.) it.

140.

1. this account or that? 2. these flowers and those; 3. this girl or that; 4. these bottles and those; 5. these hats or those; 6. this glass and that one; 7. these chairs and those tables; 8. these pens or those pencils; 9. this postman or that one; 10. at this station or (at) that one; 11. with these knives or with those.

141.

1. our house and our neighbour's; 2. her uncle or her cousin's; 3. my shoes and my friend's; 4. his hands and Henry's; 5. our postage stamps and our friends'; 6. my carriage or our neighbours'; 7. my stick and the one that he has; 8. your ticket or the one which I bought; 9. our cigars or those which you smoke; 10. their boots and those that you are wearing; 11. to your regiment or to the one (which is) in our town; 12. her dress or her sister's.

142.

1. I am reading, he does not read; 2. we were reading, they used to read; 3. they read (past def.) it, he did not read (past def.) it, we did not read (past def.) them; 4. I shall not read it, will he not read it? 5. we should not read it, would they not read the books? 6. let us read it, do not read his letter; 7. in reading it (fem.); after having read it; 8. have they read it?

EIGHTEENTH LESSON.

83. THAT WHICH, and WHAT meaning THAT WHICH, are translated :
ce qui when SUBJECT, and **ce que** (**ce qu'**) when OBJECT of a Verb.

THAT WHICH and WHAT are generally OBJECT ; but they are SUBJECT if followed immediately by the Verb in English.

I know WHAT you said.

This is WHAT he has done.

THAT WHICH is on the table is mine.

Je sais **ce que** vous avez dit.

C'est **ce qu'**il a fait.

Ce qui est sur la table est à moi

EXERCISE I.

1. Did he show you what we found ? 2. She gave us what she bought. 3. That which you said is not right.¹ 4. That which is on the table is yours.² 5. All³ that³ he said is not true.⁴ 6. I⁵ know⁵ what he has done.⁶ 7. That is not what I saw. 8. I do not know what is in this box.⁷

1 juste, 2 à vous, 3 tout ce que, 4 vrai, 5 je sais, 6 fait, 7 boîte.

PRON.—1 sheest, 2 äh voo, 3 too ser ker or tooss ker, 4 vray, 5 sher say, 6 fay, 7 bo'äht.

Numbers will be used in future instead of the names of the Tenses, thus :

1. Infinitive. 2. Present Participle. 3. Past Participle. 4. Present. 5. Imperfect. 6. Past Definite. 7. Future. 8. Conditional. 9. Imperative.

84. 1. (to) WRITE, écrire

As explained on pages 74 and 76, if the parts printed in thick type are learned, the whole Verb is mastered.

2. writing, **écriv**ant

4. I write, etc., **j'écr**is
 tu écris, il écrit

5. I was writing, etc., j'écr**iv**ais, etc.

7. I shall write, etc., j'écr**ir**ai, etc.

9. write, écr**iv**ez let us write, écriv**on**s (Familiar form : write, écris)

3. written, **écrit**

4. we write, etc., **nous écriv**ons
 vous écr**iv**ez, ils écriv**ent**

6. I wrote, etc., j'écr**iv**is, etc.

8. I should write, etc., j'écr**ir**ais, etc.

PRON.—1 eh-kreer, 2 eh-kre-vahng, 3 eh-kree, 4 sheh-kree, noo z'eh-kre-vong, 5 sheh-kre-vay, 6 sheh-kre-vec, 7 sheh-kre-reh, 8 sheh-kre-ray, 9 eh-kre-veh, eh-kre-vong.

EXERCISE II.

1. I am writing what you are dictating.¹ 2. Why did you not write to them ? 3. I shall write several letters after (the) dinner.² 4. He wrote (past def.) his name on a piece³ of paper. 5. Was she not writing in her room ?

1 dicter, 2 diner, 3 morceäu. PRON.—1 dick-teh, 2 dec-neh, 3 mor-soh.

85. If the **PERSONAL PRONOUNS** (par. 42) are not the Subject or Object of a Verb, they are called **DISJUNCTIVE**, and translated thus :

I, me	moi	we, us	nous
thou, thee	toi	you, you	vous
he, him	lui	they, them (m.)	eux
she, her	elle	they, them (f.)	elles

PRON.—mo'äh, to'äh, lwe, ell ; noo, voo, er, ell.

These Disjunctive Pronouns are used principally—

- | | | |
|-------------------------------|--------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1. after Prepositions, | 2. in Comparisons, | 3. if standing alone ; as, |
| for me, pour moi | | from him, de lui |
| he is taller THAN I | | il est plus grand que moi |
| you and I, vous et moi | | he and they, lui et eux |

4. if the Verb used in English is not expressed in French, as in the following examples :

Who is there ? I AM.	Qui est là ? Moi.
Who has spoken ? THEY HAVE.	Qui a parlé ? Eux.
Whom have you seen ? HIM.	Qui avez-vous vu ? Lui.

EXERCISE III.

1. Have you anything¹ for him ? 2. I have received it from you. 3. We shall not continue² without them. 4. Who was singing ? She [was]. 5. Who is passing before³ the house ? He [is]. 6. Who showed the town⁴ to your friends ? I [did]. 7. Is he speaking of her ? 8. Have you received the money from them (masc.) ? 9. She is not so old⁵ as he. 10. We are richer than they. 11. My friend and I. 12. He and they (fem.).

1 quelque chose, 2 continuer, 3 devant, 4 ville, 5 âgé.

PRON.—1 kell-ker shohz, 2 kong-tee-NEE-eh, 3 der-vahng, 4 vill, 5 ah-sheh.

86. **moi, lui, eux, etc.**, are used after **ce** and a tense of **TO BE**, as :

it is I	c'est moi	it is not WE	ce n'est pas nous
was it HE ?	était-ce lui ?	was it not YOU ?	n'était-ce pas vous ?
is it THEY ?	est-ce eux ?	it is THEY	ce sont eux

* In the Third Person Plural, **sont** is used, except in Questions.

EXERCISE IV.

1. Who is there ? It is I. 2. Was it not you ? No, it was she. 3. It will be he. 4. It is not they (fem.). 5. It is not I. 6. It is your brother. 7. No, it was not he. 8. Is it not they ? 9. It is Henry. 10. Was it William¹ ? 11. Is it Mary² ?

1 Guillaume, 2 Marie. PRON.—1 ghe-yohm (GH like G in 'go'), 2 mah-re.

87. MINE, HIS, etc., are generally translated by *à moi, à lui, etc.*, after TO BE, if it has the meaning of "to belong to," thus :

This hat is MINE (=to me).	Ce chapeau est <i>à moi</i> .
Those umbrellas are THEIRS.	Ces parapluies sont <i>à eux</i> .

à is also used in sentences like :

This fan is LOUISA'S.	Cet éventail est <i>à Louise</i> .
Is this pony WILLIAM'S?	Ce poney est-il <i>à Guillaume</i> ?

EXERCISE V.

1. This money is mine. 2. Those pencils are not yours ; they are Henry's. 3. Are not these ponies¹ ours? 4. No, they are theirs. 5. This purse² is William's. 6. Are these pears³ Mary's? 7. Is this plate⁴ mine? 8. No, it is that lady's.

1 poney, 2 porte-monnaie (*masc.*), 3 poire, 4 assiette.

PRON.—1 po-nay, 2 port-monn-ay, 3 po'ahr, 4 äh-se-ett.

88. 1. (to) SAY, (to) TELL, *dire*

2. saying, *disant*

4. I say, etc., *je dis*
tu dis, il dit

5. I was saying, etc., *je disais*, etc.

7. I shall say, etc., *je dirai*, etc.

9. say, *dites*

let us say, *disons* (say thou, *dis*)

3. said, *dit*

4. we say, nous *disons*
vous *DITES*, ils *disent*

6. I said, etc., *je dis*, etc.

8. I should say, etc., *je dirais*, etc.

PRON.—1 deer, 2 de-zahng, 3 dee, 4 dee, de-zong, ditt, deez, 5 de-zay, 6 dee, 7 de-reh, 8 de-ray, 9 ditt.

EXERCISE VI.

1. He used-to-say that. 2. They will say so.¹ 3. I should not say so.¹ 4. What did you say to him? 5. Tell her what I said. 6. You do not say what they replied to you. 7. I shall tell you something to-morrow. 8. Tell me your name, if² you please.² 9. He only³ said (past def.) yes. 10. What were you saying just⁴ now⁴?

1 so=it, le, 2 s'il vous plaît, 3 only=not...but, ne...que, 4 tout à l'heure.

PRON.—1 ler, 2 sill voo play, 3 ner...ker, 4 too t'ah ler.

89. All Verbs formed from *dire* are conjugated in the same way.

The 2nd Person Plural Present, however, ends in *sez*. Example :

(to) contradict, *contredire* ; you contradict, *vous contredisez*

Exception : (to) curse, *maudire*, which doubles the *s* in the Present Participle *maudissant*, and in the parts of the Verb formed from the Present Participle (see Rule II., page 74).

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Est-il chez ¹ le libraire ?	Is he at the bookseller's ?
Non, mais je crois qu'il est chez le pharmacien.	No, but I believe that he is at the chemist's.
Avez-vous été chez le dentiste aujourd'hui ?	Have you been to the dentist's to-day ?
Oui, et aussi chez le médecin, mais il n'était pas chez ¹ lui.	Yes, and also to the doctor's, but he was not at home.
Quand serez-vous chez vous la semaine prochaine ?	When will you be at home next week ?

1 *chez* (*sheh*) means 'at the house of.'

.. ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

143.

1. Ce qui est bon est généralement¹ cher ; mais ce qui est cher n'est pas toujours bon. 2. Ce qui m'empêche² de³ sortir,³ c'est la maladie⁴ de mon père. 3. Ce que j'ai dans ce porte-monnaie est à lui. 4. Tout ce qu'ils disent est très invraisemblable.⁵ 5. Qui a été au concert avec vous ? Lui. 6. Ne sont-ce pas les messieurs que nous avons rencontrés la semaine dernière ?

144.

1. what he says ; 2. that which is here ; 3. without them (masc.) ; 4. who has written ? I have ; 5. they and you ; 6. is it not she ? 7. it is not Louisa.

8. we are writing, were you writing ? 9. I shall not write, she would not write ; 10. write, let us write ; 11. they wrote (past def.), has she written ? 12. she does not write, are you not writing ?

145.

1. on him ; 2. without them ; 3. for her ; 4. under us ; 5. smaller than they ; 6. later than he ; 7. as tired as we ; 8. he and I ; 9. who is smoking ? he is ; 10. it is not she ; 11. was it not you ?

12. he says, he was not saying, did he say ? she said (past def.) ; 13. will he say ? would she not say ? tell (to) him, do not tell (to) him ; 14. I do not say, they used to say, did you not say ? they said (past def.) ; 15. will you tell him ? we should tell them, do not speak to her.

146.

1. The paper is mine. 2. Is this watch his ? 3. This plate is hers. 4. Those ponies are ours. 5. This purse is William's. 6. No, it is Mary's. 7. Are those pears Henry's ? 8. Did they tell you some (=any) thing ? 9. Tell us, if you please, what they answered. 10. I do not know ; I have forgotten it.

1 generally, *sheh-neh-rähl-mahng* ; 2 prevents, *ahng-paish* ; 3 from going out, *der sor-teer* ; 4 illness, *mäh-läh-de* ; 5 unlikely, *ang-vray-sahng-bläh-bl*.

NINETEENTH LESSON.

90.

1. (to) TAKE, **prendre**2. taking, **prenant**3. taken, **pris**4. I take, etc., **je prends**
tu prends, il prend4. we take, nous **prenons**
vous prenez, ils prennent5. I was taking, etc., **je prenais, etc.**6. I took, etc., **je pris, etc.**7. I shall take, etc., **je prendrai**8. I should take, **je prendrais**9. take, **prenez** let us take, **prenons** take (thou), **prends**PRON.—1 *prahngdr*, 2 *prer-nahng*, 3 *pre*, 4 *prahng*, *prer-nong*, *prer-neh*,
prenn, 5 *prer-nay*, 6 *pre*, 7 *prahng-dreh*, 8 *prahng-dray*.91. The principal DERIVATIVES of **prendre** are the following :(to) learn, **apprendre**
„ surprise, **surprendre**(to) understand, **comprendre**
„ undertake, **entreprendre**

EXERCISE I.

1. He does not understand your question.¹ 2. Why have you not learnt your lessons? 3. Take a seat.² 4. I shall not undertake it. 5. Does³ that surprise you? 6. He took (past def.) his hat. 7. Do you understand me? 8. He does not take any tea.⁴ 9. We shall surprise them to-morrow morning. 10. What⁵ are you learning? (the) French or (the) German? 11. At what time do you take your bath⁶? 12. Take this money.

1 question, 2 *sîde (m.)*, 3 *est-ce que*, see page 48, 4 *thé (m.)*, 5 *bain*.PRON.—1 *kess-te-ong*, 2 *se-aysh*, 3 *ess ker*, 4 *teh*, 5 *bang*.

92. ADVERBS are formed in French by adding **ment** to the Adjective, which ending corresponds to the English **LY**.

If the adjective does not end in a vowel, **ment** is added to the FEMININE form.polite, **poli** politely, **poliment** | rare, **rare** rarely, **rarement**happy, **heureux** (fem. *heureuse*) happily, **heureusement**

EXERCISE II.

1. She writes politely. 2. They talk (=speak) wisely.¹ 3. We are walking slowly.² 4. We rarely³ see them. 5. She answered (past def.) proudly.⁴ 6. I shall work⁵ actively.⁶ 7. Write it carefully.⁷ 8. Fortunately⁸ he was there. 9. He passed (past def.) us rapidly.⁹

1 wise, sage, 2 slow, lent, 3 rare, rare, 4 proud, fier; fem. *fière*, 5 tra-
vailler, 6 active, actif; fem. active, 7 careful, soigneux; fem. *soigneuse*,
8=happily, 9 rapid, rapide. PRON.—1 *sahsh*, 2 *lahng*, 3 *rahr*, 4 *fe-air*,
5 *träh-vah'e-yeh*, 6 *ähck-tiff*, 7 *so'ähv-yer*, 9 *räh-pid*.

93. The following words, called Adverbs of Quantity, take **de** (or **d'**) after them if followed by a Noun :

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| 1. assez enough | 5. moins less |
| 2. autant as much, as many | 6. peu little |
| 3. beaucoup much, many | 7. plus more |
| 4. combien how much, how many | 8. trop too much, too many |

PRON.—1 ähss-eh, 2 oh-tahng, 3 boh-koo, 4 kong-be-ang, 5 mo'ang, 6 per, 7 pleë, 8 tro.

We have **ENOUGH** time.

How **MANY** rings has she ?

They have **TOO MUCH** money.

Nous avons **assez de** temps.

Combien de bagues a-t-elle ?

Ils ont **trop d'**argent.

EXERCISE III.

1. Has he copied as many pages as I ? 2. How much sugar did you put¹ in my coffee ? 3. Do you eat² more meat than he ? 4. I have not enough paper for that. 5. She has put too much salt in the soup.³ 6. We have less money than they. 7. Have you many friends in this town ? 8. Give me a little bread. 9. That has given me a⁴ great deal⁴ of trouble.⁵ 10. How many children have they ?

1 mis, 2 manger, 3 soupe, 4=much, 5 peine.

PRON.—1 mee, 2 mahng-sheh, 3 soop, 5 pane.

94.

1. (to) SEND, envoyer

This Verb is quite regular except in the Stem of the **FUTURE** and **CONDITIONAL**, thus :

2. sending, envoyant | 3. sent, envoyé | 4. I send, etc., j'envoie*
tu envoies, il envoie ; nous envoyons, vous envoyez, ils envoient
5. I was sending, etc., j'envoyais, etc. | 6. I sent, etc., j'envoyai, etc.
7. I shall send, etc., j'enverrai, etc. | 8. I should send, etc., j'enverrais, etc.
9. send, envoyez let us send, envoyons (send thou, envoie)

*y is changed to i whenever no sound follows.

renvoyer (to send back), is of course conjugated in the same way.

PRON. 1 and 3 ahng-vo'äh-yeh, 2 ahng-vo'äh-yahng, 4 Singular and third person Plural : ahng-vo'äh ; ahng-vo'äh-yong, etc. 7 shahng-vair-eh.

EXERCISE IV.

1. We are sending a parcel to Paris. 2. When¹ will you send back my umbrella ? 3. Did you send the tickets to the hotel ? 4. I should send it back at² once.² 5. Send us your account as³ soon as³ possible.⁴ 6. Do not send the things back. 7. Will he send it by (the) post⁵ ?

1 quand, 2 tout de suite, 3 aussitôt que, 4 possible, 5 poste.

PRON.—1 kahng, 2 too der switt, 3 oh-se-toh ker, 4 poss-eebl, 5 posst.

95. Most French Adverbs are placed immediately after the Verb :

She closes the door **GENTLY**. | Elle ferme **doucement** la porte.

1. Adverbs never come between the Subject and the Verb as in English.

He **RARELY** reads the newspaper. | Il lit **rarement** le journal.

2. Most Adverbs come before the Past Participle in Compound Tenses.

They have sung **WELL**. | Ils ont **bien** chanté.

3. aujourd'hui, hier, demain ; adverbs of place (ici, là, etc.) and adverbs consisting of more than one word follow the Past Participle.

We have seen him **TO-DAY**.

Nous l'avons vu **aujourd'hui**.

I replied to their letter **AT ONCE**.

J'ai répondu à leur lettre **tout de suite**.

EXERCISE V.

1. This young-lady¹ learns her lessons well.² 2. We always take coffee³ after (the) dinner. 3. The boys have often⁴ seen it. 4. We received a letter from him yesterday. 5. I shall decline⁵ the invitation⁶ politely. 6. She often sings those songs. 7. My friends have dined⁷ already.⁸ 8. Has the postman been here this morning? 9. They sent it by return.

1 demoiselle, 2 bien, 3 café, 4 souvent, 5 refuser, 6 invitation, 7 dîner, 8 déjà. PRON.—1 der-mo'äh-zell, 2 be-ang, 3 käh-feh, 4 soo-valing, 5 rer-fEE-zeh, 6 ang-ve-tah-se-ong, 7 dec-neh, 8 deh-shäh.

96. Sometimes two of the Pronouns in par. 42 occur in one sentence. Both, of course, are placed BEFORE the Verb, le or la or l' or les following the other pronoun ; as,

I return **IT** to you.

Je **vous le** rends.

He does not show **IT** (f.) to me.

Il ne **me la** montre pas.

Do you not give **THEM** to us?

Ne **nous les** donnez-vous pas?

97. lui and leur, however, come even after le, la, les ; as,

We give **IT** to them.

Nous **le leur** donnons.

Did you not sell **THEM** to her?

Ne **les lui** avez-vous pas vendus?

In the **IMPERATIVE** their position is as in English.

Lend **THEM** to me.

Prêtez-les-moi.

EXERCISE VI.

1. Have you the newspaper? No, our neighbour has not given it back to me. 2. I shall not show them to him. 3. We shall not give it (fem.) to them. 4. Send it to her. 5. Have they sold them to us? 6. Lend me your knife. 7. I lent it to your friend, but he did not give it back to me. 8. Why did you sell them to her? 9. Bring them to me.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Combien de chevaux a-t-il ?	How many horses has he ?
Je crois qu'il en ¹ a trois.	I believe (that) he has three.
Combien avez-vous payé votre chapeau ?	How much did you pay for ² your hat ?
Je l'ai payé dix francs.	I paid ten francs for ² it.
Combien de pages avez-vous lues ?	How many pages have you read ?
J'en ai lu trente ce matin.	I have read thirty this morning.
Qu'avez-vous appris par cœur ?	What have you learnt by heart ?
J'ai appris ce que vous m'avez dit d'apprendre.	I have learnt what you told me to learn.

1 *en* (*ahny*), ~~OF~~ IT, OF THEM, must be used in French when the Noun is not expressed ; 2 *FOR* in 'pay for' is not translated.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

147.

The French given here is the Masculine form of the Adjective.

1. correctly, correct ; 2. prettily, joli ; 3. frankly, franc¹ (fem., franche²) ; 4. rarely, rare ; 5. truly, vrai ; 6. secretly, secret³ (fem., secrète⁴) ; 7. falsely, faux⁵ (f., fausse⁶) ; 8. sweetly, doux⁷ (f., douce⁸) ; 9. rapidly ; 10. politely ; 11. happily, heureux⁹ (fem., heureuse¹⁰).

12. I am taking, thou art not learning, does he not surprise ? 13. we understand, do you not undertake ? they do not take ; 14. I was learning, she used to surprise, were they not understanding ? 15. we shall undertake, will you take ? they will not learn.

148.

1. enough money ; 2. too many children ; 3. how much time ? 4. many friends ; 5. more room (place) ; 6. less butter ; 7. little bread ; 8. as many houses ; 9. how many stamps ? 10. too much noise ; 11. a great deal of (=much of) ink ; 12. little water.

13. he is sending, she was sending, we shall send ; 14. they would send back, send it back, I am sending it ; 15. do you send ? did you send ? were you not sending ? 16. they are sending, were you not sending ? will you not send to them ?

149.

1. He always smokes cigars. 2. We have often seen him. 3. Have you been there ? 4. They found it at once. 5. I sent it by return of (the) post. 6. They had already written the letter.

7. give it to me, do not give it to me, I shall send them to her, will she not send it to us ? 8. lend it to him, do not lend them to her ; I shall show it to you, will you not show them to us ? 9. did you return them to me ? I returned them to her, will you bring it to me ? we shall not bring them to you.

PRON.—1 *franhg* ; 2 *franhgsh* ; 3 *ser-kray* ; 4 *ser-krate* ; 5 *foh* ; 6 *fohss* ; 7 *doo* ; 8 *dooss* ; 9 *er-rer* ; 10 *er-rerz*.

TWENTIETH LESSON.

98. If the **IMPERATIVE** is used negatively, the Pronouns **PRECEDE** the Verb in the usual order, thus :

Give IT TO ME.	Donnez- le-moi .
Do not give IT TO ME.	Ne me le donnez pas.
Lend THEM TO HER.	Prêtez- les-lui .
Do not lend THEM TO HER.	Ne les lui prêtez pas.

moi if coming before the Verb is changed into **me**.

EXERCISE I.

1. Here are the matches ; give them to him. 2. This is my address ; do not show it to them. 3. There is a knife ; do not lend it to her. 4. Is this his purse ? give it to him. 5. I lent him some money, but he did not return it to me.

99. 1. (to) **DO** or (to) **MAKE, faire**

2. doing or making, faisant	3. done or made, fait
4. I make or I do, etc., je fais tu fais, il fait	4. we make or do, nous faisons vous FAITES , ils FONT
5. I was making or doing, je faisais	6. I made or did, je fis
7. I shall make or do, je ferai	8. I should make, je ferais
9. make, faites let us make, faisons (make thou, fais)	

PRON.—1 fair, 2 fer-zahng, 3 fay. 4 Sing. fay ; Plur. fer-zong, fate, fong, 5 fer-zay, 6 fee, 7 fer-reh, 8 fer-ray, 9 fate, fer-zong, fay.

EXERCISE II.

1. What are you doing ? 2. I am doing what you told me. 3. You are always doing the same¹ thing. 4. What has he done this morning ? 5. Let us do something² else.² 6. What was he doing ? 7. Have you done that ? 8. I shall not do it. 9. Would you do that ? 10. These children are making too much noise. 11. Do it at once. 12. We were doing our lessons.³ 13. How many mistakes⁴ have you made (par. 64) ?

1 même, 2 autre chose or quelque chose d'autre, 3 leçon (f.) or devoir, 4 faute. PRON.—1 maim, 2 oh-tr shohz, kell-ker shohz doh-tr, 3 ler-song, der-vo'âhr, 4 foht.

100. **EACH** and **EVERY** followed by a Noun are translated **chaque**.

EACH ONE, EVERY ONE are translated **chacun**, fem. **chaque**, according to the Noun they refer to. PRON.—shâhck, shâhck-ung, shâhck-EEN.

EACH, when meaning **EACH ONE**, is **chacun**.

EACH lady	chaque dame	EVERY boy	chaque garçon
EACH of these ladies			chaque de ces dames

101.

1. (to) RECEIVE, **recevoir**2. receiving, **recevant**4. I receive, etc., je **reçois**

tu reçois, il reçoit

5. I was receiving, je **recevais**7. I shall receive, je **recevrai**9. receive, **recevez** let us receive, **recevons** (receive thou, **reçois**)3. received, **reçu**4. we receive, nous **recevons**vous recevez, ils **reçoivent**6. I received, je **reçus**8. I should receive, je **recevrais**

PRON.—1 *rer-ser-vo'ähr*, 2 *rer-ser-vahng*, 3 & 6 *rer-SEE*, 4 *rer-so'äh*, *rer-ser-vong*, *rer-ser-veh*, *rer-so'ähv*, 5 *rer-ser-vay*, 7 *rer-ser-vreh*, 8 *rer-ser-vray*.

EXERCISE III.

1. I receive a letter nearly¹ every day. 2. Each of those boys received a prize.² 3. You will receive an invitation from the mayor.³ 4. Receive them politely. 5. Has he not received the money (which) we sent to him last week? 6. How many pounds have you received (par. 64) for this sum⁴? 7. The king⁵ received (past def.) the deputation.⁶ 8. They will not receive the parcel before⁷ the⁸ day after to-morrow.⁹

1 *presque*, 2 *prix*, 3 *maire*, 4 *somme*, 5 *roi*, 6 *députation*, 7 *avant*, 8 *après-demain*. PRON.—1 *press-ker*, 2 *pree*, 3 *mair*, 4 *somm*, 5 *ro'äh*, 6 *dch-peE-tah-se-ong*, 7 *äh-vahng*, 8 *äh-pray der-mang*.

102. All Verbs ending in **avoir** are conjugated like **devoir**.

The Verbs in **avoir** are frequently called the third regular Conjugation. But there are only seven of them in all; and besides **recevoir**, the only one of importance is **devoir**, TO OWE (**devoir** also means SHALL, OUGHT TO, MUST). The stem of **devoir** is the letter D.

1. (to) owe, **devoir**2. owing, **devant**3. owed, **dû***4. I owe, etc., je **dois**, ils **doivent** 6. I owed, je **dus** 7. I shall owe, je **devrai***There is no accent in the Feminine and Plural forms (*due, dus, dues*).

FOR REFERENCE.—1. I owe, I am to, etc., je **dois**, tu **dois**, il **doit**; nous **devons**, vous **devez**, ils **doivent**. 5. I was owing, I was to, etc., je **devais**, etc.

8. I should owe, I ought to, etc., je **devrais**, etc.9. owe, **devez** let us owe, **devons** (owe thou, **dois**)

EXERCISE IV.

1. How much do I owe you? 2. He owes me twenty francs. 3. You must* shut the door. 4. Shall* I pay his account¹? 5. He must* do it. 6. You should* tell the truth.² 7. They do not owe him any money. 8. You must* not write to him. 9. Must* we not do our work³? 10. They must* not see him.

1 note (f.) or compte (*maso.*), 2 *vérité*, 3 *travail*.PRON.—1 *not*, *kongt*, 2 *veh-re-teh*, 3 *träh-vah'e*.

*translate MUST, SHALL, and SHOULD (meaning 'ought to') by **devoir**, thus: shall I? must I? am I to? *dois-je?* (*do'ähsh*) | he must not, il ne doit pas | I should (=ought) not to, je ne devrais pas | you should, vous devriez

103. SOME and ANY, not followed by a Noun, are translated **en**, which is put BEFORE the Verb, like the Pronouns in par. 42.*

*Unless the Verb is Imperative Affirmative,—see par. 76.

Have you ANY cigars ?

Avez-vous des cigares ?

Yes, we have SOME.

Oui, nous **en** avons.

(a) **en** must be inserted in French, even if not expressed in English :

How many sisters have you ?

Combien de sœurs avez-vous ?

I have three (OF THEM).

J'**en** ai trois.

(b) OF IT, OF THEM, SOME (or ANY) OF IT or OF THEM, are also **en** :

Are you not speaking OF IT ?

N'**en** parlez-vous pas ?

Show us SOME OF THEM.

Montrez-nous-**en**.

EXERCISE V.

1. Here are some pears ; will¹ you have¹ any ? 2. There is the money ; I spent² a shilling of it. 3. He brought his sketches³ ; he has shown me two (of them). 4. How many rings does she wear ? 5. She wears three. 6. What is the colour of it ? 7. What was the price of them ? 8. What did she say of them ? 9. Here is the pepper⁴ ; I have taken some of it.

1 voulez-vous ? 2 dépenser, 3 croquis, 4 poivre (*masco.*).

PRON.—1 voo-leh voo, 2 deh-pahng-seh, 3 kro-kee, 4 po'äh-vr.

104. THERE, TO IT, TO THEM, IN IT, IN THEM, are translated **y**, which is put before the Verb, like the Pronouns in par. 42.

(THERE, if pointing out a place, is translated là).

Is he THERE ? **Y** est-il ?

Add this TO IT. Ajoutez-**y** ceci.

We shall add this TO THEM.

Nous **y** ajouterons ceci.

1. **y** and **en** follow the other Pronouns which come before the Verb.

2. **en** is placed after **y**, if **y** and **en** occur together.

We shall send some THERE.

Nous **y en** enverrons.

Add some to it. Ajoutez-**y-en**.

Give me some. Donnez-m'**en**.

(instead of 'moi en')

3. **y** must be added, when necessary to complete the sense.

Was he at the theatre ? Yes, he was. | Était-il au théâtre ? Oui, il **y** était.

EXERCISE VI.

1. Did you put any ink in it ? 2. Yes, I have put some in (it). 3. Have you been to Paris¹ ? 4. Yes, I have (been there). 5. Did you eat some apples ? 6. No, there are none (=it has not any of them there). 7. Have you put any oil² in the salad³ ? 8. I shall add⁴ some to it.

1 Paris, 2 huile, 3 salade, 4 ajouter.

PRON.—1 päh-re, 2 weel, 3 säh-lähd, 4 äh-shoo-teh.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Y ¹ a-t-il ¹ loin ² d'ici au parc ?	Is it far from here to the park ?
Il y a à ³ peu près ³ dix minutes.	It is about ten minutes.
N'y a-t-il pas assez de place pour nous ?	Is there not sufficient room for us ?
Non, il n'y a de place que ⁴ pour quatre.	No, there is only room for four.
Combien ⁵ de temps ⁵ y a-t-il que Monsieur X est parti ?	How long is it since Mr. X. went ?
Il n'y a que cinq minutes.	It is only five minutes.

1 literally ; there has it. PRON.—1 e äh till ; 2 lo'ang ; 3 äh per pray ; 4 ne...que, only ; 5 literally : how-much of time.

• • ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

150.

1. Ils étaient heureusement absents à ce moment. 2. Quand me renverrez-vous les journaux que je vous ai prêtés ? 3. Nous les renverrons sans faute demain matin. 4. À qui est ce parapluie ? 5. Il est à Guillaume. 6. N'est-il pas à vous ?

151.

1. sell it to me, do not sell it to me ; 2. show them to her, do not show them to her ; 3. let us give it back to them, do not let us give it back to them ; 4. give it to him, do not give it to him ; 5. each page, every picture ; 6. each of these chairs ; 7. every one of my books.

8. he makes it, he was doing, he has not done it, he will do it ; 9. we do not make, were you not doing it ? 10. we shall not do it, would you not do it ? 11. I do, thou wast not making, he did (past definite) ; 12. we shall not make, would you not make ? they have not made ; 13. make it, do not do it, let us make it, do not let us do it.

152.

1. We have spoken of it. 2. He will give me some. 3. I will send you some. 4. They do not speak of it. 5. Will you have some ?

6. I receive, he does not receive, we are receiving ; 7. do you not receive ? they receive, the ladies do not receive ; 8. I was receiving, she received (past definite), have you not received ? 9. we shall receive, would you receive ? do not receive them.

153 (use *devoir* throughout this Exercise).

1. I must speak to you. 2. Shall I shut the door ? 3. Should you not accompany him ? 4. We ought to continue. 5. You must do it. 6. Shall I not (=am I not to) receive him ?

7. I do not owe, he will not owe, do not owe ; 8. shall I not ? he ought not to, you should ; 9. we used to owe, he will not owe, he owed ; 10. I do not owe this money. 11. Does he not owe you twenty francs ? 12. You must not speak to him.

TWENTY-FIRST LESSON.

105.

1. (to) DRINK, boire

2. drinking, **buvant**4. I drink *or* am drinking, je **bois**

tu bois, il boit

5. I was drinking, je **buvais**7. I shall drink, je **boirai**9. drink, **buvez**let us drink, **buvons** (drink thou, bois)3. drunk, **bu**4. we drink, nous **buvons**,
vous buvez, ils **boivent**6. I drank, je **bus**8. I should drink, je **boirais**

PRON.—1 bo'ăhr, 2 bEE-vahng, 3 and 6 bEE, 4 bo'ăh, bEE-vong, bEE-veh,
bo'ăhv, 5 bEE-vay, 7 bo'ăh-reh, 8 bo'ăh-ray.

EXERCISE I.

✓1. I do not drink (any) beer. 2. They do not drink (any) wine. 3. She was drinking her coffee. 4. Do not drink this; it is not very good. 5. I shall not drink any of it. 6. Did you drink any? 7. We should drink tea and coffee.

106. THE WHOLE OF THE WHOLE OF THE is translated : ALL THE.

ALL {	MASCULINE : Singular tout , Plural tous	PRON.—too
FEMININE :	" toute , " toutes	toot

1. the whole, the whole of my, etc., tout **le**, tout **mon**, etc.The whole town. **Toute la ville.**The whole of the book. **Tout le livre.**All my friends. **Tous mes amis.**All the ladies. **Toutes les dames.**

2. **ALL**, referring to a Noun in the Plural mentioned just previously, is rendered by **tous** or **toutes**. (PRON.—tooss, toot)

Where are the ladies?

All are in this room.

Have you brought the journals?

Yes, they are all here.

Où sont les dames?

Toutes sont dans cette chambre.

Avez-vous apporté les journaux?

Oui, ils sont tous ici.

3. **EVERYTHING**, or **ALL** meaning 'everything,' is rendered by **tout**, which is invariable.

Everything is lost. **Tout est perdu.** | That is all. **C'est tout.**

EXERCISE II.

1. All these stamps are mine. 2. The whole house is full of smoke.¹ 3. Where are your friends? Are they all here? 4. Did you invite² the ladies? 5. Yes, I have written to all. 6. Have you found everything? 7. All his family³ lives⁴ in (=at) Paris. 8. They lost all their money. 9. That is all that (which) I have to ask you. 10. All these rules⁵ are useful.⁶ 11. Have you read the whole story⁷? 12. Is this all?

1 fumée, 2 inviter, 3 famille, 4 demeurer, 5 règle, 6 utile, 7 histoire.

PRON.—1 fEE-meh, 2 ang-ve-teh, 3 fâh-mee'e, 4 der-mer-eh, 5 raygl,
6 EE-till, 7 iss-to'ăhr.

107. 1. (to) BE WILLING TO OR WANT TO, vouloir

- | | |
|--|--|
| 2. being willing or wanting, voulant | 3. been willing or wanted, voulu |
| 4. I am willing or want, je veux
tu veux , il veut | 4. we want, nous voulons
vous voulez , ils veulent |
| 5. I was willing, je voulais | 6. I wanted, je voulus |
| 7. I shall be willing, je voudrai | 8. I should want, je voudrais |

9. IMPERATIVE: **veuillez** (=will you kindly, be so good as to)

1 *vool-währ*, 2 *voo-lahny*, 3 *voo-lee*, 4 *ver*, *voo-long*, *voo-leh*, *verl*, 9 *ver'e-yeh*

EXERCISE III.

✓1. He does not want to* sing. 2. Are you willing to* fetch it? 3. She did not want to* learn it. 4. Kindly¹ tell me—. 5. I should be willing to* help² you. 6. Has he not been willing to* do it? 7. Will you narrate³ a story to-us? 8. They do not want to see us. 9. He will be willing to pay you. 10. Are they not willing to help us?

1 *veuillez*, 2 *aider*, 3 *raconter*. PRON.—2 *ay-deh*, 3 *räh-kong-teh*.

*To after any part of **vouloir** is not translated.

108. Adverbs of Negation always require ne before the Verb.

Do you NEVER sing?	Ne chantez-vous jamais ¹ ?
We have NOTHING for you.	Nous n'avons rien ¹ pour vous.
I see NOBODY here.	Je ne vois personne ¹ ici.

more literally: not sing you ever? we not have anything for you,

I not see anybody here. 1. PRON.—*shah-may*, *re-ang*, *pair-sonn*.

(a) If **personne**, **rien**, or **jamais** comes first, the **ne** still precedes the Verb.

NOBODY is here.	Personne n'est ici.
NEVER will I do that.	Jamais je ne ferai cela.

(b) Some more examples of Negations are:

She has ONLY two friends=She not has but two friends.	Elle n'a que deux amis.
We have NO MORE money.	Nous n'avons plus d'argent.
He drinks NEITHER wine NOR beer.	Il ne boit ni vin ni bière.

'Wine and beer' is 'du vin et de la bière'; but *du*, *de l'*, *de la* and *des* are omitted after *ni*.

EXERCISE IV.

1. He drinks nothing. 2. She never learns her lessons. 3. They had no more of it. 4. We were only three. 5. He is neither old¹ nor young. 6. I shall drink no more. 7. She has never seen me. 8. He eats neither meat² nor fish.³

1 *vieux*, 2 *viande*, 3 *poisson* (m.). 1 *ve-er*, 2 *ve-ahngd*, 3 *po'äh-song*.

109. 1. (to) BE ABLE TO, (CAN), pouvoir2. being able to, **pouvant**4. I am able to *or* I can, je **peux**
(*or* je **peux**), tu **peux**, il **peut**5. I was able *or* could, je **pouvais**7. I shall be able to, je **pourrai**3. been able to, **pu**4. we can, nous **pouvons**vous pouvez, ils **peuvent**6. I was able to *or* could, je **pus**8. I should be able to, je **pourrais**PRON.—1 poo-vo'ahr, 2 poo-vahng, 3 and 6 pee, 4 per, pwe, per, per ;
poo-vong, poo-veh, perv, 5 poo-vay, 7 poor-reh, 8 poor-ray.**EXERCISE V.**

1. I cannot speak to you to-day. 2. He was-able-to† do it as¹ well as¹ you. 3. I shall be able to* be there before² six o'clock. 4. Would you be able to* go there this afternoon³? 5. They cannot drink this tea, because⁴ it is too strong.⁵ 6. We were not able to* understand his question. 7. Have you not been able to* finish the letter? 8. I shall not be able to* return the things (the) next^{6b} week.^a 9. Can they not come?

1 aussi bien que (see par. 56), 2 avant, 3 après-midi (m. or f.), 4 parce que, 5 fort, 6 prochain. PRON.—1 oh-se be-ang ker, 2 ah-vahng, 3 ah-pray me-de, 4 pährss ker, 5 for, 6 pro-shang, fem. pro-shane.

† In the Past Tense, the IMPERFECT of **vouloir** (see par. 107) and **pouvoir** is more generally used than the Perfect.

COULD meaning 'would-be-able-to' is rendered by the CONDITIONAL of **pouvoir**. I could speak to him to-morrow, je pourrais lui parler demain.

*TO after any part of **pouvoir** is not translated.

110. EVERY, followed by a Noun, is generally translated by **tous les** (masc.) or **toutes les** (fem.) instead of **chaque** (each), as:

EVERY Monday, **tous les lundis** | EVERY week, **toutes les semaines**
EVERYBODY, EVERYONE (=all the world), **tout le monde**

111. SOME, meaning A FEW, followed by a Noun, is **quelques**:

He bought some (a few) neckties. | Il a acheté quelques cravates.

some one, **quelqu'un** | some (ones), **quelques-uns**

Some of those girls.

Quelques-unes de ces filles.

I have read some (a few, masc.).

J'en ai lu quelques-uns.

EXERCISE VI.

1. We meet them every Thursday. 2. They see a copy¹ every six months. 3. Everybody was saying so.² 4. Some of his friends were here. 5. We met some of the young ladies. 6. I have spent a few shillings. 7. Some one has broken the windows. 8. We have eaten some (a few) apples and (some) pears. 9. Has he not spoken to some of these men?

1 **exemplaire** (masc.), 2=it.

PRON.—1 eg-zahng-plair.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Je peux le voir, <i>or</i> Je puis le voir.	Puis-je* vous aider?
Avez-vous été en Amérique ¹ ?	Non, mais j'ai été en Australie. ³
Votre famille demeure-t-elle à Hambourg ³ ?	Non, elle demeure dans une petite ville d'Italie. ⁴
Savez-vous ⁵ que sa sœur est en Irlande ⁶ ?	Non, je pensais qu'elle était en Écosse. ⁷
Avez-vous visité tous les musées, ⁸ les galeries ⁹ de tableaux, etc.?	Oui, nous avons visité toute la ville.
Son ami est-il Autrichien ¹⁰ ?	Non, je crois qu'il est Russe. ¹¹
Quelle est la capitale ¹² de la France?	Tout le monde sait ¹³ cela, c'est Paris.

* 'I CAN' may be rendered either as **je peux** or **je puis**; but 'CAN I?' can only be rendered as **puis-je** (pronounce: pweesh)?

1 äh-meh-reek; 2 oh-sträh-le; 3 ahng-boohr; 4 e-täh-le; 5 do you know? 6 eer-lahngd; 7 eh-koss, Scotland; 8 mee-zeh, museums; 9 gäh-ler-re; 10 oh-tree-she-ang, Austrian; 11 reEss, Russian; 12 käh-pe-täh; 13 knows.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

154.

1. all the week; 2. the whole street; 3. all the men; 4. the whole of the lesson; 5. all his children; 6. the whole of their money; 7. all the pictures; 8. our whole journey¹; 9. all the wine; 10. his whole life.²

1. I do not drink, he was drinking, will she drink it? they would not drink it, do not drink; 12. drink it, do not drink it, did you not drink it? they are drinking; 13. were you drinking? he drank (past def.); they will not drink, I should not drink it.

155.

1. Has he drunk all? 2. I shall never learn that. 3. She did not buy anything. 4. We saw nobody (=we not have seen anybody). 5. I shall not give him more (of them). 6. Nobody asked me (it).

7. he is not willing to, I was not willing to, they did not want to (past def.), we shall not want to; 8. I should want to; are they willing to? she will not want to, will-you-kindly (Imperative); 9. do you want to? were you willing to? will you be willing to? would you be willing to?

156.

1. every Sunday; 2. every afternoon; 3. a-few pens; 4. some of these apples; 5. a few pages; 6. every gentleman; 7. some of those books. 8. That is all. 9. Have you taken any (some) of these stamps? 10. She bought a few pounds of fish.

11. I cannot, I was not able; will he not be able? we should be able; 12. can you? could you not? will you be able? would you not be able? 13. they cannot, they were able, will they be able? would they not be able?

1 voyage (masc.); 2 vie. PRON.—1 vo'äh-yähsh; 2 vee.

TWENTY-SECOND LESSON.

112.

1. (to) **KNOW, savoir**2. knowing, **sachant**4. I know, je **sais**

tu sais, il sait

5. I knew, je **savais**7. I shall know, je **saurai**9. know, **sachez** let us know, **sachons** (know thou, **sache**)3. known, **su**4. we know, nous **SAVons**

vous savez, ils savent

6. I knew, je **sus**8. I should know, je **saurais**

PRON.—1 *sāh-vo'āhr*, 2 *sāh-shahng*, 3 *SEE*, 4 *say*, *sāh-vong*, *sāh-veh*, *sāhv*,
5 *sāh-vay*, 6 *SEE*, 7 *soh-rah*, 8 *soh-ray*, 9 *sāh-sheh*, *sāh-shong*.

Notice that the STEM in the Plural Present and in the Imperfect is an exception to Rule II. on page 74, being **sav...**, not **sach...** In the Imperative the Stem is **sach...**

EXERCISE I.

1. I know it. 2. We used always to know our lesson.
3. You will know it to-morrow. 4. Don't you know where he lives? 5. If I knew that he had done that, I should give (to-) him a box¹ on the ear.¹ 6. Does he not know the cabman's² number³? 7. He knew it, but he has forgotten it.

1 soufflet (blow on the cheek), 2 cocher, 3 numéro.

PRON.—1 *soo-flay*, 2 *ko-sheh*, 3 *nee-meh-ro*.

As explained in par. 16, the Feminine of most Adjectives is formed by adding **e** to the Masculine; but those ending in **e** do not change.

113. Some Adjectives undergo a further change, as follows :

	MASC.	FEM.
(a) Final f is changed to ve	vif	lively
(b) " x " " se	jaloux	jealous
(c) " er, et " " ère, ète ... {	cher	dear
	secret	secret
(d) Adjectives ending in eil, el, en double the final consonant and add e	pareil	like
	italien	Italian
(e) Monosyllables ending in s or t also double the final consonant and add e	las	tired
	net	clean
		nette

PRON.—(a) *veef*, *veev*; (b) *shāh-loo*, *shāh-looz*; (c) *shair*, *shair*, *ser-kray*, *ser-krate*; (d) *pāh-ray'e*, *pāh-ray'e*; *e-tāh-le-ang*, *e-tāh-le-enn*; (e) *lah*, *lahss*; *nay* (sometimes pronounced : *nett*), *nett*.

EXERCISE II.

Give the Feminine of the following words :

1. attentive, attentif; 2. Russian, russe; 3. complete, complet; 4. first, premier; 5. green, vert; 6. happy, heureux; 7. low, bas; 8. cruel, cruel; 9. Austrian, autrichien; 10. foolish, sot.

PRON.—1 *āh-tahng-teef*, 2 *REESS*, 3 *kong-play*, 4 *per-me-eh*, 5 *vair*, 6 *er-rer*, 7 *bah*, 8 *kree-ell*, 9 *oh-tree-she-ang*, 10 *so*.

The following irregular feminine forms should be learned at once. The less important irregularities are given in the Appendix.

MASC.		FEM.	MASC.		FEM.	MASC.		FEM.
blanc	white	blanche	faux	false	fausse	long	long	longue
doux	sweet	douce	frais	fresh	fraîche	public	public	publique
épais	thick	épaisse	franc	frank	franche	sec	dry	sèche

114.

1. (to) HOLD, **tenir**2. holding, **tenant**4. I hold or I am holding, je **tiens**

tu tiens, il tient

5. I was holding, je **tenais**7. I shall hold, je **tiendrai**9. hold, **tenez**let us hold, **tenons** (hold thou, **tiens**)

FOR REFERENCE.—6. tins, tins, tint; tinmes, tintes, tintrent.

PRON.—1 *ter-neer*, 2 *ter-nahng*, 3 *ter-NEE*, 4 *te-ang*; *ter-nong*, *ter-neh*, *te-enn*, 5 *ter-nay*, 6 *tang*; *tang-m*, *tangt*, *tang-r*, 7 *te-ang-dreh*, 8 *te-ang-dray*.All compounds of **tenir** are conjugated in the same way; as.(to) contain, **contenir** | (to) belong, **appartenir** | (to) obtain, **obtenir**

EXERCISE III.

1. To whom does this belong? 2. This page contains all the information.¹ 3. The sailor² was holding the cable.³ 4. These things used-to-belong to our neighbour. 5. Hold this, please. 6. These boxes contain nothing.

1 information, 2 *matelot*, 3 *câble* (masc.).PRON.—1 *ang-for-mah-se-ong*, 2 *mäh-ter-lo*, 3 *kahl*.115. **venir** (to come) is conjugated exactly like **tenir**, thus :1. to come, **venir**2. coming, **venant**3. come, **venu**4. I come, je **viens**, ils **viennent**6. I came, je **vins**7. I shall come, je **viendrai**PERFECT: I have come, je **suis venu**FOR REFERENCE.—4. *viens*, *viens*, *vient*; *venons*, *venez*, *viennent*.5. je *venais*, etc. 6. *vins*, *vins*, *vint*; *vinmes*, *vintes*, *vinrent*. 8. je *viendrais*, etc.9. come, **venez** let us come, **venons** (come thou, **viens**).The following are conjugated like **venir** :(to) become, **devenir**; (to) come back, **revenir**; (to) suit, **convenir**.

EXERCISE IV.

1. He will come back to-morrow. 2. Come here. 3. They used-to-come every day. 4. He comes from Paris. 5. Where do they come from¹? 6. I shall not come alone. 7. We should come with you, if we had (the) time. 8. He came (past def.) at the end² of (the) last³ month.^a 9. That does not suit me.

1 translate: FROM where do they come? 2 *fin* (fem.), PRON.—2 *fang*.

116. être (TO BE) is used in French before the following **PAST PARTICIPLES** instead of the English **TO HAVE** :

1. **allé**, gone ; **arrivé**, arrived ; **devenu**, become ;
2. **entré**, entered ; **parti**, started, gone away ; **revenu**, come back ;
3. **sorti**, gone out ; **resté**, remained ; **tombé**, fallen ; **venu**, come.

PRON.—1 ähl-eh, ahr-ce-veh, der-ver-NEE ; 2. ahng-treh, pahr-te, rer-ver-NEE ; 3 sor-te, ress-tch, tong-bch, ver-NEE.

PAST PARTICIPLES following any part of **TO BE** take the same Gender and Number as their Subject ; as,

She has not arrived.	Elle n'est pas arrivée.
Did the men come ?	Les hommes sont-ils venus ?
My sisters will have gone out.	Mes sœurs seront sorties.

EXERCISE V.

1. They have gone to a ball.¹
2. She did not enter.
3. Have the girls gone away ?
4. Nobody had come.
5. The huntsmen² will have come back.
6. She would have remained with her aunt.
7. Did she not fall down³ the staircase⁴ ?
8. Our friends (have) remained all the week.

1 bal, 2 chasseur, 3 en bas de, 4 escalier.

PRON.—1 bäh, 2 shäh-ser, 3 ahng bah der, 4 ess-käh-le-ch.

117. The PLURAL OF ADJECTIVES is formed FROM THE SINGULAR OF THE SAME GENDER in the same way as the Plural of Nouns.

	MASC. SING.	FEM. SING.	MASC. PLUR.	FEM. PLUR.
small	petit	petite	petits	petites
bad	mauvais	mauvaise	mauvais	mauvaises
happy	heureux	heureuse	heureux	heureuses
legal	légal	légale	légaux	légales
tired	las	lasse	las	lasses
beautiful	beau	belle	beaux	belles

EXCEPTION.—**bleu** (blue) makes : bleus, bleues, in the Plural.

EXERCISE VI.

1. They were reading (some) French newspapers.
2. The pictures (which) he bought (par. 64) are very beautiful.
3. What beautiful blue flowers !
4. My cousins were not present.
5. What large hands he has !
6. I should¹ like to¹ see some black gloves. Have you any in² stock² ?
7. These rules are very difficult to (à) understand.

1 voudrais, 2 en magasin. PRON.—1 voo-dray, 2 ahng mäh-gäh-zang.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

De qui avez-vous obtenu ces renseignements ¹ ?	Du chef de gare (chief of station = station master) lui-même. ³
Que contient cette malle ³ ?	Des effets ⁴ à (=for) mon usage. ⁵
Ces bagages vous appartiennent-ils ? [soir ?	Non, ils appartiennent à cette dame.
Viendrez-vous nous voir demain	Oui, si le temps est beau.
Qu'est devenu votre ami, Monsieur F. ?	Il est parti aux États-Unis ⁶ d'Amérique.
Êtes-vous content de votre nouvelle maison ?	Oui, elle me convient beaucoup.

1 particulars ; 2 himself ; 3 trunk ; 4 things ; 5 use ; 6 United States.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

157.

1. This watch is very dear. 2. She is very jealous. 3. Is your sister not happy ? 4. It is the first^a street.^b 5. These two houses are alike (pareil). 6. Is not that lady Italian ? 7. That was a foolish^a affair.^{1b} (affaire, fem.). 8. The colour of-it is green.

9. I know, I did not know, I have known ; 10. he knew (p. def.), she will not know, would he know it ? 11. we do not know, did you know (Imperf.) / they will know it ; 12. he will not know, would you know ? they have known.

158.

1. a white hand ; 2. a sweet apple ; 3. (the) last week ; 4. (some) fresh water ; 5. a long^a street^b ; 6. (the) public opinion¹ ; 7. a complete page¹ ; 8. an Austrian town ; 9. a cruel action¹ ; 10. a lively conversation¹ ; 11. a secret correspondance¹ ; 12. a complete édition.¹

13. he does not hold, I was holding, we held (past def.) ; 14. have you been-holding (=held) ? I shall not hold, would they not hold ? 15. let us hold, do not hold it, I am holding them ; 16. it contains, it belonged, did it not contain ?

159.

1. She did not come-in (=enter). 2. Why did they (fem.) not come ? 3. They will have gone-out. 4. They had not arrived. 5. I should have gone-out. 6. The men have not come-back.

7. is he coming ? we were not coming, have they not come ? 8. she becomes, we shall not come back, would they not come ? 9. they do not come, were you coming ? do not come ; 10. come with me, has he become ? have they not come back ? do they not come ?

160.

Give the Fem. Sing., Masc. Plural, and Fem. Plural of : 1. French, Russian, Austrian ; 2. lively, unhappy (malheureux), last ; 3. discreet (discret), similar (pareil), low (bas) ; 4. foolish, white, dry (see page 95).

1 The French word only is given, when nearly the same as in English.

Words marked a precede in French those marked b.

TWENTY-THIRD LESSON.

118.

1. (to) GO, aller

2. going, allant

3. gone, allé

4. I am going, je vais

4. we go, nous allons

tu vas, il va

vous allez, ils vont

5. I was going, j'allais

6. I went, j'allai

7. I shall go, j'irai

8. I should go, j'irais

9. go, allez

let us go, allons (go thou, va)

PERFECT TENSE : I HAVE gone, je suis allé or allée

PRON.—1 äh-leh, 2 äh-lahng, 3 ah-leh, 4 vay, vâh, vâh, äh-long, äh-leh, vong, 5 shâh-lay, 6 shâh-leh, 7 she-reh, 8 she-ray.

I AM ABOUT TO OR I AM GOING TO, etc., are rendered by je vais, etc., TO not being translated ; as,

He IS GOING TO write to him.

Il va lui écrire.

WERE they not GOING TO play ?

N'allaient-ils pas jouer ?

EXERCISE I.

1. Where are you going ? 2. He was going to the theatre.
3. We shall go to Paris to-morrow. 4. Why does he not go with you ? 5. He will not go alone. 6. Let us go together.
7. Do not go into (=in) the street. 8. Are those men going to the market ? 9. They are not going to sing. 10. We are about to commence. 11. I am not going to buy it. 12. She was not going to do it.

119. MYSELF, OURSELVES, etc., following a Verb in English, are translated in French like ME, US, etc. (see par. 42).

HIMSELF, HERSELF, THEMSELVES are translated by **se** (or **s'**).

These words precede the Verb in the usual way (for exception, see par. 76).

I flatter MYSELF

je me flatte

he does not warm HIMSELF

il ne se chauffe pas

we were amusing OURSELVES

nous nous amusions

were they not dressing THEMSELVES ?

ne s'habillaient-ils pas ?

do not flatter YOURSELF (or SELVES)

ne vous flattez pas

EXERCISE II.

1. Warm yourself in this room. 2. He is flattering himself too much. 3. Why are you not dressing yourself ? 4. Are they not amusing themselves ? 5. Does he not dress himself [in] the evening ? 6. Enjoy (=amuse) yourself well at the theatre. 7. Were they not warming themselves ? 8. We were not flattering ourselves. 9. Do not warm yourselves too much. 10. Were not the ladies dressing themselves ?

120. SHALL or WILL must be expressed by the FUTURE TENSE in French, when the meaning is future ; as,

I shall speak to them soon.
Will they come to-morrow ?

Je leur parlerai bientôt.
Viendront-ils demain ?

121. SHOULD or WOULD must be expressed by the CONDITIONAL in French, when meaning that something would happen conditionally on something else happening ; as,

He would pay me, if he had the money.
I should write to him, if I knew his address.

Il me payerait, s'il avait l'argent.
Je lui écrirais, si je savais son adresse.

122. When SHALL and SHOULD express compulsion or duty,—that is, when they are equivalent to MUST, AM TO, HAVE TO, OUGHT TO, etc.,—**devoir** must be used (see page 87) ; as,

SHALL I (=am I to) shut the door ?
They SHALL (=must) not do it.
She SHOULD (=ought to) pay it.

Dois-je fermer la porte ?
Ils ne doivent pas le faire.
Elle devrait le payer.

123. When WILL and WOULD mean WANT TO, BE WILLING TO, **vouloir** must be used ; as,

WILL he (=is he willing to) sell it ?
They WOULD NOT (=did not want to)
I WILL not give it to you. [come.

Veut-il le vendre ?
Ils n'ont pas voulu venir.
Je ne veux pas vous le donner.

REMARK.

With I and WE, SHALL ought to be employed for the Future Tense, and SHOULD for the Conditional. In the Second and Third Persons, WILL is Future, and WOULD Conditional. But as this rule is often broken, especially in questions, and as SHALL, WILL, SHOULD and WOULD all vary in meaning, it is necessary to know the exact meaning before the sentence can be translated.

EXERCISE III.

(CAPITALS indicate that **vouloir** or **devoir** is to be employed)

1. She WILL not accompany us. 2. You SHOULD not say that. 3. We shall wash ourselves. 4. The children WOULD not enjoy (=amuse) themselves. 5. SHALL they not inform him ? 6. SHOULD we not accompany her home ? 7. They would not come without informing us of-it. 8. They WOULD not come with us. 9. I WILL not speak to him. 10. SHALL I go there without you ? 11. She SHALL not keep¹ that. 12. I WILL write it myself.² 13. They will not find him at home. 14. He WOULD not apologise.³

1 garder, 2 moi-même, 3 s'excuser. 1 gahr-deh, 2 mo'äh-mame, 3 sex-kee-zeh.

124.

1. (to) RUN, *courir*2. running, *courant*4. I am running, je *cours*
tu *cours*, il *court*5. I was running, je *courais*7. I shall run, je *courrai*9. run, *courez*let us run, *courons* (run thou, *cours*)3. run, *couru*4. we run, nous *courons*vous *courez*, ils *courent*6. I ran, je *courus*8. I should run, je *courrais*

PRON.—1 koo-reer, 2 koo-rahng, 3 koo-ree, 4 koohr, koo-rong, koo-h-reh, koohr, 5 koo-ray, 6 koo-ree, 7 koohr-reh, 8 koohr-ray.

EXERCISE IV.

1. The horses are running. 2. Do not run so¹ fast.² 3. He was running the whole time. 4. Let us run after³ them. 5. Why are you running? 6. The boys will run this evening. 7. Why are you always running? 8. I should not run, if I were (Imperfect Tense) in⁴ your place.⁴

1 si, 2 vite, 3 après, 4 à votre place. 1 se, 2 vitt, 3 äh-pray, 4 äh votr plähss.

When a Verb is followed by MYSELF, HERSELF, YOURSELF, etc., it is called REFLECTIVE, because the action done reflects back on the doer; thus,

HE amuses HIMSELF ('HE amuses ME, I amuse HIM,' are not reflective)

125. The COMPOUND TENSES of all French Verbs used reflectively are formed with *être*. The Past Participle then takes the Gender and Number of the preceding Direct Object, thus:

Has she burnt herself?

We(m.) have warmed ourselves.

They will have flattered themselves.

The ladies had not yet dressed themselves.

S'est-elle brûlée?

Nous nous sommes chauffés.

Ils se seront flattés.

Les dames ne s'étaient pas encore habillées.

Note carefully that the Verb 'to have' is translated by the corresponding part of 'to be.'

The Participle does not vary in Gender or Number if the Object is INDIRECT:

we said TO-ourselves

nous nous sommes dit

they spoke TO-each-other (=to themselves)

ils se sont parlé

EXERCISE V.

1. We have not amused ourselves. 2. They would have dressed themselves. 3. The boys had not washed¹ themselves. 4. Has she not been-flattering herself? 5. They have established² themselves. 6. He had not been-hurrying³ himself.³ 7. Why has she not dressed herself? 8. The girls will not have dressed themselves in (=to) time.

1 laver, 2 établir, 3 se dépêcher.

PRON.—1 läh-veh. 2 eh-täh-bleer, 3 ser deh-pay-sheh.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Comment ¹ ! vous n'avez pas encore répondu à sa lettre ?	Pas encore ; mais je vais le faire tout ² de suite. ³
Pourquoi vous êtes-vous habillé si ³ élégamment ⁴ ?	Je vais à une soirée ⁵ qui commence à huit heures.
Quand pensez-vous aller à la campagne ⁶ ?	Probablement la semaine prochaine, s'il fait beau temps. ⁷
Vous (fem. plur.) êtes-vous bien amusées au théâtre hier soir ?	Oui, assez bien ; on ⁸ jouait une très belle comédie.
Comment vous portez ⁹ -vous ?	Merci, je me porte très bien.

1 how *or* what ; 2 at once ; 3 so ; 4 elegantly ; 5 evening party ; 6 country ; 7 weather ; 8 one, people, they ; 9 *se porter*, to be (referring to health). PRON. — 1 *komm-ahng* ; 2 *too der sweet* ; 3 *se* ; 4 *eh-leh-gâh-mahng* ; 5 *so'âh-reh* ; 6 *kahng-pahn-yer* ; 7 *tahng* ; 8 *ong* ; 9 *por-teh*.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

161.

1. I am going to speak to him. 2. He was about to¹ go² away.³
3. They were not going to buy it. 4. Are you not about to go³ out³ ?
5. We were going to punish them. 6. Is he not going to sing ?

7. I am not going to, art thou going to ? he is going to ; 8. is she not going to ? we are going to, are you not going to ? 9. they are going to, are they (fem.) not going to ? I was about to ; 10. she was not about to, are they not about to ? they were not going to.

162.

1. I was warming myself before⁴ the fire. 2. They are flattering themselves too⁵ soon.⁵ 3. You will enjoy (=amuse) yourself. 4. We shall not apologize (=excuse ourselves). 5. Wash yourself. 6. Are the boys dressing themselves ?

7. I wash myself, dost thou wash thyself ? he does not wash himself ; 8. is she washing herself ? we are washing ourselves, are you not washing yourself ? 9. the children are washing themselves, does not your brother wash himself ? 10. I was washing myself, he was not flattering himself, was she enjoying (=amusing) herself ?

163.

1. I shall run faster⁶ than you. 2. They would run as⁷ long⁷ as we. 3. Is he running after me ? 4. Let us run a little⁸ faster. 5. Do not run all the time. 6. The horses were running as fast as possible.⁹

7. I shall amuse myself, will he not dress himself ? we shall flatter ourselves ; 8. will you not warm yourself ? they will not dress themselves ; 9. I should warm myself, would he not enjoy himself ? you would not flatter yourselves.

1 TO in ' I am going to = I am about to, ' etc., is not translated ; 2 *partir* ; 3 *sortir* ; 4 *devant* ; 5 *trop tôt* ; 6 *vite* ; 7 *aussi longtemps* ; 8 *peu* ; 9 *possible*.

TWENTY-FOURTH LESSON.

126. All the important Verbs which are very irregular have now been given. To conjugate the remainder, it is sufficient to learn the following forms :

INFINITIVE.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRESENT.	PAST DEF.
(to) follow suivre	suisant	suivi	je suis	suisis
„ suffice suffire	suffisant	suffi	je suffis	suffis
„ laugh rire	riant	ri	je ris	ris

PRON.—swce-vr, swe-vahng, swe-ve, swce, swe-ve ; SEE-feet, SEE-fe-zahng, SEE-fee, SEE-fee ; reer, re-ahng, ree, rec, rec.

By learning the above parts, and the FUTURE 'STEM' when irregular, the rest of the Verb can always be formed (see Rules on pages 74, 76).

RULE ON FORMATION OF PRESENT TENSE (repeated).

If the First Person Singular ends in **s**, the Second also ends in **s**, and the Third in **t**. The Stem of the Plural is found by taking **ant** from the Present Participle. Example :

4. I follow, je suis, tu suis, il suit	4. we follow, nous suivons, vous suivez, ils suivent
5. I was following, je suivais	8. I should follow, je suivrais
7. I shall follow, je suivrai	

EXERCISE I.

1. Why are you laughing ? 2. He does not follow us. 3. It did not suffice (Imperf.) 4. Do not laugh so loud (haut=high). 5. I do not follow you. 6. That will not suffice. 7. He will laugh if he sees that. 8. Has he been-following you ?

127. Many Verbs are REFLECTIVE in French that are not used reflectively in English, thus :

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. (to) dispute, quarrel, se disputer | 3. (to) rest, se reposer |
| 2. „ be (in health), se porter | 4. „ exclaim, cry out, s'écrier |

PRON.—1 ser diss-pee-teh, 2 ser por-teh, 3 ser rer-po-zeh, 4 seh-kre-ch.

They are not disputing.

How are you ? or How do you do ?

She has rested.

Ils ne se disputent pas.

Comment vous portez-vous ?

Elle s'est reposée.

EXERCISE II.

1. They quarrel every day. 2. You rest too often. 3. Why did you cry out ? 4. He is not well. 5. She did not quarrel with her sister. 6. Have you (plural) rested ? 7. I am not well. 8. We are very well. 9. How is your cousin to-day ? 10. The soldiers were fighting.¹ 11. They would not (=did not want to) fight. 12. We must apologize.²

1 (to) fight, se battre, 2 (to) apologize, s'excuser. 1 ser bâtr, 2 sex-kee-zeh.

128. TO between two Verbs is generally translated **de**, unless TO means IN ORDER TO, when it is rendered by **pour**; as,

I advise you TO speak to him.	Je vous conseille de lui parler.
We did it (in order) TO satisfy them.	Nous l'avons fait pour les satisfaire.

EXERCISE III.

1. I forgot to write to him. 2. We waited at the station (in order) to meet them. 3. I regretted¹ having² spoken. 4. He said so³ to calm⁴ you. 5. She tries⁵ to help⁶ me. 6. They are studying to pass an examination.⁷ 7. We work⁸ to earn⁹ money. 8. He recollects¹⁰ having² written this.

1 regretter, 2=to have (d'avoir); see note to par. 69; 3=it; 4 calmer; 5 essayer, 6 aider, 7 examen, 8 travailler, 9 gagner, 10 se souvient.

PRON.—1 rer-grett-eh, 4 kahl-meh, 5 ess-ay-yeh, 6 ay-deh, 7 eg-zäh-mang, 8 träh-vah'e-yeh, 9 gäh-n-yeh, 10 soo-ve-ang.

129. After certain Verbs,* TO must be translated **à** instead of **de**. The most important of these Verbs are :

- | | |
|------------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. aimer, to like | 3. avoir, to have† |
| 2. apprendre, to learn | 4. inviter, to invite |

PRON.—1 ay-meh, 2 äh-prahngdr, 3 äh-vo'ahr, 4 ang-vee-teh.

I like TO do that.

J'aime à faire cela.

He has nothing TO say.

Il n'a rien à dire.

† **de** is used in phrases like : j'ai le plaisir (pleasure) de vous informer, nous avons l'honneur de vous saluer (salute), j'ai le regret de vous annoncer.

130. TO is not translated after Verbs* of an auxiliary nature, such as :

1. aller, (to) go. 2. devoir, must or ought to. 3. laisser, let or allow to. 4. pouvoir, can or be able to. 5. vouloir, want to or be willing to.

They wanted TO see you.

Ils voulaient vous voir.

Is he not able TO come ?

Ne peut-il pas venir ?

* For complete lists, see Hugo's "French Verbs Simplified."

EXERCISE IV.

1. He is learning to write. 2. Are you not going to commence ? 3. They invited us to come with them. 4. Allow me to pass. 5. We have to obey. 6. Were they not able to help you ? 7. The soldiers were not able to cross¹ the river. 8. Have they not to do this ? 9. The ladies will want to dance. 10. Do you like skating (=to skate)² ? 11. Have you nothing to do ? 12. They must try it.

1 traverser, 2 patiner.

PRON.—1 träh-vair-seh, 2 päh-te-neh.

131. INFINITIVE.	PRES. PART.	PAST PART.	PRESENT.,	PAST DEF.
(to) feel	sentir	sentant	senti	je sens je sentis
" go out	sortir	sortant	sorti	je sors je sortis
" go away	partir	partant	parti	je pars je partis
" sleep	dormir	dormant	dormi	je dors je dormis
" serve	servir	servant	servi	je sers je servis
" lie	mentir	mentant	menti	je mens je mentis

EXERCISE V.

1. Do you feel the draught¹? 2. She does not feel (herself) well. 3. Why did you (plur.) go out without me? 4. They will go away before six o'clock.² 5. Has your cousin (fem.) gone out? 6. At what time (=hour) will she come³ back³? 7. You will feel it to-morrow. 8. Let us go out together. 9. They serve in the same regiment. 10. He does not sleep well. 11. Do not lie. 12. The dinner⁴ was served upstairs.⁵

1 courant d'air, 2 heures (hours), 3 revenir, 4 dîner, 5 en haut.
PRON.—1 koo-rahng dair, 2 er, 3 rer-ver-neer, 4 dee-neh, 5 ahng hoh.

132. The Preposition **chez** means literally AT OR TO THE PLACE OF :

at my place	chez moi	at my aunt's	chez ma tante
at his house	chez lui	to the doctor's	chez le docteur
to their place	chez eux	at our house	chez nous
from my butcher's de chez mon boucher			

HOME, AT HOME is also frequently rendered by **chez moi** (at-the-place-of me), **chez lui**, etc., instead of **à la maison**.

They are going HOME.	Ils vont chez eux (or à la maison).
She is not AT HOME.	Elle n'est pas chez elle .
Are they AT HOME?	Sont-ils chez eux ?

133. TO, AT, IN before the name of a town, village, or place, are translated by **à**, and before the name of a country by **en**; as,

He lives IN Paris.	Il demeure à Paris.
Are you going TO London?	Allez-vous à Londres?
She is IN France.	Elle est en France.
They are going TO Switzerland.	Ils vont en Suisse.

EXERCISE VI.

1. He is going home. 2. She was coming out of the butcher's. 3. He is writing a letter to Germany. 4. Are they not in Paris? 5. We met them at our aunt's. 6. Is he not at home? 7. She was not at home; she was at her neighbours'. 8. We met them as¹ they were coming² away² from home.

1 comme, 2 sortir.

PRON.—1 komm, 2 sor-teer.

CONVERSATIONAL SENTENCES.

Quelle méthode suivez-vous pour apprendre cette science ?	Je suis la méthode que mon professeur m'a recommandée.
Cet argent vous suffira-t-il pour faire vos achats ¹ ?	Je pense en avoir assez pour ce que j'ai à acheter.
Pourquoi ces hommes se disputent-ils ?	Parce qu'ils ont trop bu.
N'oubliez pas de venir nous voir le ² plus tôt ² possible.	J'essayerai ³ de venir mercredi prochain dans l'après-midi. ⁴
Allez-vous partir bientôt ⁵ pour le continent ?	Je compte ⁶ y aller dans une quinzaine ⁷ de jours. ⁷

1 purchases ; 2 the most soon—as soon as ; 3 shall try ; 4 afternoon ; 5 soon ; 6 count, reckon=intend ; 7 fifteen of days=fortnight.

ADDITIONAL EXERCISES.

164.

1. They were following their friends. 2. Rest a little. 3. Why do you laugh so loud ? 4. How is (=carries himself) your friend ? 5. Do not apologize (=excuse yourself). 6. I do not follow him.

7. I follow, he does not follow, do we follow ? 8. you do not follow, do the men not follow ? she was following ; 9. he followed (past def.), he will not follow, would he follow ? 10. follow me, do not follow us, let us follow them ; 11. it suffices, it did not suffice (Imperf.), it will suffice ; 12. are you laughing ? were you not laughing ? you would not laugh.

165.

1. I shall try to write to-day. 2. We did it in-order-to help them. 3. Do you like to work ? 4. Are you willing to accompany us ? 5. We have nothing to do. 6. She was singing (in order) to amuse us.

7. I go out, thou wast going out, he will not go out ; 8. should we go out ? you (plur.) have not gone out, let us go out ; 9. do not go away, is he going away ? they were going away ; 10. I shall not go away, would she not go away ? she has not gone away ; 11. is she sleeping ? do not sleep, have they been sleeping ? 12. he will not sleep, the children were not sleeping, let us sleep.

166.

1. Is he not at home ? 2. We were at their place. 3. We are not going home. 4. He was at my brother's. 5. Do you live in France or in Germany ? 6. We have a house in Paris.

7. Are you going to Switzerland ? 8. He sent a parcel to England. 9. They went away to Germany. 10. she serves, are you serving ? I was serving ; 11. we have served, have you not served ? they will serve ; 12. do you not feel ? have you felt it ? I should not feel it.

TWENTY-FIFTH LESSON.

134. Notice the following peculiarities of Verbs ending in **er** :

- (a) those in **ger** or **cer** change the **g** into **ge**, and the **c** into **ç** (cedilla), before a termination beginning with **a, o, u**.

This is done to keep the sound of the Stem the same as in the Infinitive.

- (b) **e** and **é** are changed into **è**, if occurring before a **SINGLE** consonant followed by mute **e, es, or ent**.

juger we judge nous jugeons	commencer he began il commença
acheter I buy j'achète	espérer he hopes il espère

(e is always mute except in the termination **ez**, and in the Infinitive termination **er**.)

- (c) Some Verbs in **ler** and **ter** double the **l** and **t** before mute **e, es, ent**.

The most important of these Verbs are :

épeler to spell, **appeler** to call, **rappeler** to recall, **renouveler** to renew, **jeter** to throw, **cacher** to seal, **feuilleter**, to turn over the leaves.

- (d) Verbs in **yer** generally change **y** to **i** before mute **e, es, ent**.

épeler he spells il épelle	jeter they throw ils jettent
payer I pay je paie or paye	essuyer he wipes il essuie

EXERCISE I.

1. he commences, we do not commence ; 2. do you judge ? they were judging ; 3. we buy, he does not buy ; 4. has he led¹ ? will you lead ? 5. he was repeating,² does he not repeat ? 6. he will not pay you, do not pay him. 7. He is sealing his letter. 8. They will renew their order.³

135. The following Verbs in **frir, vrir** are all conjugated alike :

	Infinitive.	Pres. Part.	Past Part.	Present.	Past Def.
to cover	couvrir	couvrant*	couvert	je couvre†	je couvris
to offer	offrir	offrant	offert	j'offre	j'offris
to open	ouvrir	ouvrant	ouvert	j'ouvre	j'ouvris
to suffer	souffrir	souffrant	souffert	je souffre	je souffris

découvrir (to discover), is conjugated like **couvrir**.

* Irregular **IR** Verbs do not add **ISS**. Imperfect : je couvrais, etc.

† If the first Person ends in **E**, the Second ends in **ES**, and the Third in **E**, so that the Present of these Verbs takes the same endings as **ER** Verbs.

EXERCISE II.

1. Do you open the shop⁴ at eight o'clock ? 2. He is suffering a-great-deal (=much). 3. She was offering me a chair. 4. What have you discovered ? 5. Open the door. 6. Do not cover the things. 7. Has he offered you anything⁵ ? 8. I shall open the doors and (the) windows.

1 mener, 2 répéter, 3 commande, 4 boutique, 5 quelque chose.

136. IMPERSONAL VERBS and expressions* are only used in the Third Person Singular ; as,

IT is raining, *il pleut*
IT is fine, *il fait beau*

IT is not necessary, *il ne faut pas*
IT was cold, *il faisait froid*

*IT is called impersonal, when it does not stand for a Noun.

137. THERE IS, there are, etc., are translated by **IT THERE HAS, etc.**

there is, there are, *il y a*
there will be, *il y aura*
there is not, *il n'y a pas*
there has not been, *il n'y a pas eu*

there was, there were, *il y avait*
there would be, *il y aurait*
are there not? *n'y a-t-il pas?*
had there been? *y avait-il eu?*

Voilà (=behold) is the translation of **THERE IS, THERE ARE**, when anything is pointed out ; *il y a*, etc., simply expresses existence.

..

EXERCISE III.

1. There are some persons¹ who say that. 2. Are there not any chairs for us? 3. There will not be anything² to do. 4. Is there a post-office³ in this street? 5. There were no pictures on the wall.⁴ 6. Are there any mice⁵ in your kitchen⁶? 7. Were there no cigars in my case⁷?

1 personne (fem.), even if referring to a male, 2 not...anything, ne...rien (see Rule 108), 3 bureau de poste, 4 mur, 5 souris (f.), 6 cuisine, 7 étui.

138. PREPOSITIONS never end a French sentence (see Rule 39).

Where do you come **FROM**?
What is he speaking **OF**?
The man he is writing **TO**.

D'où venez-vous?
De quoi parle-t-il?
L'homme à qui il écrit.

139. BEFORE (referring to time)=previous to, prior to, **avant**
BEFORE (referring to place)=in front of, in presence of, **devant**

He was waiting **BEFORE** the door.
They left **BEFORE** us.

Il attendait **devant** la porte.
Ils sont partis **avant** nous.

140. même (-self); **mêmes** (-selves); are added to **moi, lui, vous, nous**, etc. (Rule 85), when **MYSELF, OURSELVES**, etc., are not reflective. The two words are connected by a hyphen.

The queen herself.

| La reine elle-même.

EXERCISE IV.

1. What are you writing on? 2. The children they were playing with. 3. He goes away before five o'clock. 4. The paper he is reading in. 5. We were here before you. 6. The table was before us. 7. The gentleman he is speaking to. 8. Which parcel did you put it in? 9. He came himself. 10. They gave it to the ladies themselves.

141. TO PUT : 1 mettre, 2 mettant, 3 mis, 4 je mets, 5 je mis.

PRESENT TENSE in full : mets, mets, met ; mettons, mettez, mettent.

PRON.—may, may, may ; mett-*ong*, mett-*eh*, mett.

The **t** of the termination in the 3rd person Singular of the Present is omitted, whenever the Stem ends in **d** or **t**. All Verbs ending in **mettre** are conjugated in the same way ; as, **admettre** to admit, **omettre** to omit, **permettre** to permit, **promettre** to promise. Examples :

He does not permit.

Do we not admit ?

Il ne permet pas.

N'admettons-nous pas ?

EXERCISE V.

1. Do you not admit them ? 2. He did not promise it.
3. We shall not permit it. 4. Why have they omitted them ?
5. He will not admit it. 6. They promised (past def.) it to me.
7. Do not omit to tell (it) them. 8. Would he not permit it ?

142. WHOSE when Interrogative is translated as **TO WHOM ? à qui ?**

Whose carriage is that ?

A qui est cette voiture ?

De qui is used when the following word refers to a person, thus :

Whose doctor is he ?

De qui est-il le médecin ?

143. WHAT, when SUBJECT, must be translated **qu'est-ce qui ?**WHAT, when OBJECT is translated **que** or **qu'est-ce que ?**WHAT (is it that) is causing
that noise ?

Qu'est-ce qui fait ce bruit ?

Qu'est-ce que vous avez

WHAT have you bought ?

acheté ? or Qu'avez-vous acheté ?

144. All Verbs ending in indre are conjugated alike :1. TO FEAR **craindre**, 2. fearing **craignant**, 3. feared **craint**4. I fear, **je crains**
tu crains, il craint4. we fear, nous **craignons**
vous craignez, ils craignent5. I feared, **je craignais**6. I feared, **je craignis**7. I shall fear, **je craindrai**8. I should fear, **je craindrais**9. fear, **craignez** ; let us fear, **craignons** (fear thou, crains).PRON.—1 *krang-dr*, 2 *krain-yahng*, 3 *krang*, 4 *krang*, *krain-yong*, *krain-yeh*, *krain-yer*, 5 *krain-yay*, 6 *krain-yee*, 7 *krang-dreh*, 8 *krang-dray*.**EXERCISE VI.**

1. Whose hat was this ? 2. What are you painting¹ ?
3. Whose friend is he ? 4. What smells² so strong ? 5. Why is
he complaining³ ? 6. What amuses you ? 7. Whose gloves are
these ? 8. They do not fear anything.⁴ 9. Everybody⁵
feared (imperf.) him. 10. Why did you complain³ ? 11. Who will
paint¹ the picture ? 12. Why does he not put⁶ out⁶ the lamp ?

1 peindre, 2 sentir, 3 se plaindre, 4 ne...rien (Rule 108), 5 tout le monde,
6=extinguish, éteindre. PRON. 1 *pang-dr*, 3 *ser pang-dr*, 6 *eh-tang-dr*.

145. The INDEFINITE PRONOUN **on** is much used in French.

(1) Its literal translation is **ONE** (used indefinitely).

ONE does not say that.

On ne dit pas cela.

(2) **WE, YOU, THEY, PEOPLE**, if not referring to a definite person or persons, are rendered by **on**, the Verb being always made singular.

What are **THEY** playing (*or* is being played) at the theatre this evening?

Que joue-t-**on** au théâtre ce soir?

Where do **THEY** sell stamps?

Où vend-**on** des timbres-poste?

PEOPLE like to enjoy themselves.

On aime à s'amuser.

(3) The English Passive Voice is frequently rendered by **on**.

It is said. **On** dit.

It is announced. **On** annonce.

French SPOKEN here.

Ici **on** parle français.

That is easily UNDERSTOOD.

On comprend cela facilement.

On after **et** or **si** is usually changed into **l'on**: if they come, si **l'on** vient. This is optional, and is not done if the next word commences with **l**.

EXERCISE VII.

1. There is a knock=One knocks.¹ 2. You are wanted=One asks-for² you. 3. People are speaking of you. 4. One likes to be at³ home.³ 5. Some one (=one) was singing in the street. 6. No smoking allowed=One smokes not here: 7. It is said that she is going to die.⁴ 8. If they ask-for² your address.

1 frapper, 2 demander, 3 chez soi (one's self), 4 mourir.

146. **BETTER** is translated by **meilleur** if ADJECTIVE, and by **mieux** if ADVERB.

PRON.—may'e-**yer**, me-**er**.

BETTER is an Adjective when it describes a person or thing, and an Adverb when it describes how something is done.

This apple is **BETTER**.

Cette pomme est **meilleure**.

She sings **BETTER** than he.

Elle chante **mieux** que lui.

The same distinction applies to **BEST** (**le meilleur** and **le mieux**).

pire WORSE (Adjective) is sometimes used instead of **plus mauvais**

moindre LESS

pis WORSE (Adverb)

"

"

"

"

"

"

"

"

plus petit
plus mal

147. **demi** (half) is made Feminine if coming AFTER, but not if coming before a Feminine Noun; as,

It was two hours and a half.

C'était deux heures et demie.

I shall come in half an hour.

Je viendrai dans une demi-heure.

EXERCISE VIII.

1. These books are better than those. 2. She writes better than you. 3. He bought a pound and [a] half of butter. 4. His umbrella is the best. 5. He is working worse than yesterday. 6. She eats less every day. 7. This boy works (the) best of all.

TWENTY-SIXTH LESSON.

148. The PRESENT OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE is formed from the PRESENT PARTICIPLE by changing **ant** into :

e, es, e; ions, iez, ent*		
that I (may) give, etc. que je donne que tu donnes qu'il donne		that we (may) give, etc. que nous donnions que vous donniez qu'ils donnent

FURTHER EXAMPLES : that I (may) sell, finish, put, etc.

que je	que tu	qu'il	que nous	que vous	qu'ils
vende	vendes	vende	vendions	vendiez	vendent
finisse	finisses	finisse	finissions	finissiez	finissent
mette	mettes	mette	mettions	mettiez	mettent

EXERCISE I.

Form the Present of the Subjunctive of the following :

1. fermer, attendre, remplir ; 2. partir (Rule 131), écrire (84), lire (81) ; 3. savoir (112), voir (77), dire (88). 4. that I may pass ; 5. that he may not speak ; 6. that we may lose ; 7. that you may not give back ; 8. that they may succeed ; 9. that she may obey ; 10. that he may write ; 11. that they may not know ; 12. that you may sell.

149. The only irregular PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVES are given below :

acquérir	que j'acquière	prendre	que je prenne
aller	" j'aile	recevoir†	" je reçoive
s'asseoir	" je m'asseye	seoir	qu'il siée
boire	" je boive	tenir	que je tienne
falloir	qu'il faille	venir	" je vienne
mourir	que je meure	valoir	" je vaille
mouvoir	" je meuve	vouloir	" je veuille

Only the First Person Singular need be learned, as all the Persons of the Singular, and the 3rd Person Plural, have the SAME IRREGULAR STEM.

Example : aller, THAT I (MAY) GO, etc., que j'aile, que tu ailles, qu'il aille ; que nous allions, que vous alliez, qu'ils aillent.

150. The following four are quite irregular :

que je	que tu	qu'il	que nous	que vous	qu'ils
avoir	aie	aies	ait	ayons	ayez
être	sois	sois	soit	soyons	soyez
faire	fasse	fasses	fasse	fassions	fassiez
pouvoir	puisse	puisses	puisse	puissions	puissiez
					puissent

* These are the endings of the Present Indicative of ER Verbs, with an 't' added in the First and Second Persons Plural,

† All Verbs ending in **avoir** are conjugated like **recevoir**.

EXERCISE II.

Form the Present of the Subjunctive of the following :

1. aller, faire, boire ; 2. pouvoir, prendre, venir ; 3. avoir, être, vouloir ; 4. that I (may) come ; 5. that he (may) not be able ; 6. that we may be willing ; 7. that you may not hold ; 8. that they may not go ; 9. that we may come back ; 10. that you may not receive ; 11. that they may do it.

151. The Third Person of the PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE is used for the Third Person IMPERATIVE (see Remark to Rule 58) ; as,

let him have	qu'il ait	let them be	qu'ils soient
let him speak	qu'il parle	let them finish	qu'ils finissent

152. The IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE of ALL Verbs (without exception) is formed from the PAST DEFINITE by changing the final letter of the 1st Person Singular into :

sse, sses, 't, ssions, ssiez, ssent

In the 3rd Person Sing., the vowel preceding the **t** takes a circumflex accent.

EXAMPLES :

that I had *or* that I might have
que j'eusse que nous eussions
que tu eusses que vous eussiez
qu'il eût qu'ils eussent

that I was *or* that I might be
que je fusse que nous fussions
que tu fusses que vous fussiez
qu'il fût qu'ils fussent

that I gave, finished, received *or* that I might give, finish, receive.

que je	que tu	qu'il	que nous	que vous	qu'ils
donnasse	donnasses	donnât	donnassions	donnassiez	donnassent
finisse	finisses	finît	finissions	finissiez	finissent
reçusse	reçusses	reçût	reçussions	reçussiez	reçussent

REMARK.—In deference to custom, we have placed **que** before the Subjunctive, and given an English translation. Both practices, however, are misleading. **Que** is not always followed by the Subjunctive, and **MAY** and **MIGHT** are frequently an incorrect translation of this Mood.

EXERCISE III.

Form the Past of the Subjunctive of the following :

1. avoir, être, fermer ; 2. attendre, remplir, lire (81) ; 3. pouvoir (109), tenir (114), prendre (90). 4. that I replied *or* might reply ; 5. that she might not succeed ; 6. that they might not have ; 7. that she might come (115) ; 8. that we might speak ; 9. that you might be ; 10. that he might write (84).

153. 1. to be necessary, falloir.

3. been necessary, fallu

5. it was necessary, il fallait

7. it will be necessary, il faudra

4. it is necessary, il faut

6. it was necessary, il fallut

8. it would be necessary, il faudrait

The Verb following **falloir**, unless Infinitive, must be in the Subjunctive.

154. The Subjunctive is used in **RELATIVE SENTENCES** : (1) if following a Superlative ; (2) if following : *seul, premier, dernier*.

The largest horse (that) I saw.		Le plus grand cheval que j' <i>aie</i> vu.
The only man who knows it.		Le seul homme qui le <i>sache</i> .

155. The Subjunctive must be used after certain **CONJUNCTIONS**, the most important of which are :

<i>afin que</i> , so that	<i>avant que</i> , before	<i>en cas que</i> , in case
<i>jusqu'à ce que</i> , until	<i>pour que</i> , in order that	<i>quoique</i> , (al)though
We shall do it, though it is late.		Nous le ferons, quoiqu'il soit tard.
I shall wait until he comes.		J'attendrai jusqu'à ce qu'il vienne.

EXERCISE IV.

1. It is the only thing he sells. 2. The best book that I have ever read. 3. The finest picture that he has painted. 4. Give it to the first man who comes. 5. Wait until I am ready. 6. Although he is rich, he is not happy. 7. We shall speak to them before they have finished it. 8. He has come, so that we may-be-able-to speak of-it.

156. The Subjunctive is used after most Verbs used **NEGATIVELY** or **INTERROGATIVELY**.

Is it probable that she will* come ?		Est-il probable qu'elle <i>vienn</i> e ?
He does not believe they will* start.		Il ne croit pas qu'ils partent.

After *dire, savoir, and informer*, the Subjunctive is not employed ; as, I do not know what he said, Je ne sais pas ce qu'il a dit.

157. The Subjunctive is used after **IMPERSONAL VERBS** and expressions, except those denoting certainty or probability ; as,

It is necessary for me to start.		Il faut que je <i>part</i> e.
It is just that he should* be punished.		Il est juste qu'il <i>soit</i> puni.
It is better that he should* come.		Il vaut mieux qu'il <i>vienn</i> e.

EXERCISE V.

1. Do you think (that) he will* be at home ? 2. I do not believe¹ (that) she wants to dance. 3. Do you not hope that we shall* pass the examination ? 4. I did not think (Imperf.) he would* come. 5. Is it necessary that we should* start ? 6. Is it not likely (=probable) that he will* see it ? 7. Don't you know that he will be there ? 8. He did not say that he could (Imperf.) do it. 9. Is it possible that the money is his ? 10. I do not expect (=think) that he will receive a prize.

* see Rule 158.—1. I believe, *je crois* (from *croire*).

158. The Subjunctive has only two Tenses. The Present Subjunctive is always used unless the first Verb is Imperfect or Conditional. After these two, the Imperfect Subjunctive is used.

From this Rule it follows that : he is, was, will be, should be, would be, may be, might be, etc., can only be translated by *soit* or *fût*.

159. The Subjunctive is used after certain VERBS followed by *que*, the most important of which are :

vouloir , to want, wish	falloir , to be necessary	désirer , to desire
craindre , to fear	regretter , to regret	douter , to doubt
I regret she is here.		Je regrette qu'elle <i>soit</i> ici.
We wait them to be there.		Nous désirons qu'ils <i>soient</i> là.
He does not want me to see it.		Il ne veut pas que je le <i>voie</i> .

160. A few of the Verbs and Conjunctions which govern the Subjunctive may take *ne* before the following verb, unless the first verb is Interrogative or Negative. This insertion of *ne* is now optional. The most important are :

avoir peur, craindre, to be afraid, to fear ; **empêcher**, to prevent ;
prendre garde, to take care ; **à moins que**, unless

He fears that you know it. | Il craint que vous (*ne*) le sachiez.
BUT : Does he fear that you know it ? | **Craint-il que vous le sachiez ?**

EXERCISE VI.

1. We regret that he did not find us. 2. She fears that he will come. 3. Is it necessary for us to wait (=that we wait) ? 4. I doubted whether (=that) they would come. 5. I am afraid he will wait for you. 6. We feared (Imperf.) that you would not receive it. 7. We wish (Conditional) they had not commenced it. 8. I wish (Conditional) she were not here.

161. *falloir* (see par. 153) is frequently used for **MUST**, **HAVE TO**, and other words denoting compulsion. In this case the English must be changed thus :

I **SHALL HAVE TO** do it—it will be necessary that I do it.

Il *faudra que* je le fasse.

Are you not **OBLIGED TO** wait ? = is it not necessary that you wait ?

Ne faut-il pas que vous attendiez ?

He **MUST** start = it is necessary that he start. Il faut qu'il parte.

EXERCISE VII.

1. Must you do it ? 2. You will have to write to him. 3. He would not have to finish it. 4. We must know it. 5. It is not necessary for us to (=that we) copy the address. 6. It was not necessary (Imperf.) for them to speak (=that they spoke).

162. When **WANT**, **WISH**, etc. are followed in English by an Object and an Infinitive, the construction must be changed thus :

I want YOU to go there with him = I want THAT YOU go there with him.

Je veux que vous y alliez avec lui.

They wished HIM TO COME = They wished THAT HE came.

Ils voulaient qu'il vint.

163. **SHALL I ? SHALL WE ?** are frequently rendered thus :

SHALL we copy it ? **Voulez-vous** que nous le **copions** ?

SHALL I not finish that ? **Ne voulez-vous pas** que je **finisse** cela ?

EXERCISE VIII.

1. Does he want her to (=that she) read it ? 2. They want me to speak to him. 3. Will he want you to write to them ? 4. She wishes you to accept this. 5. They will not want us to keep it. 6. Does she not wish us to stay there ? 7. We do not want them to hear us. 8. Did you want (Imperf.) me to do (=that I did) it for you ? 9. Shall I do it for him ? 10. Shall we not go there ? 11. Shall I not send it to him ? 12. Shall we fetch it ? 13. Shall I shut the window ?

REMARKS ON THE SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD.

We have given in Lesson 26 the chief Rules on the Subjunctive, as laid down by the best authorities. But in spite of what grammarians say, this mood is avoided by Frenchmen in conversation as much as possible, it being often pedantic even when grammatically correct.

As the rules show, the Subjunctive should be used under certain conditions, **NO MATTER WHAT THE ENGLISH WORDING IS.** It is always preceded by **que**, expressed or understood, although **que** is not always followed by the Subjunctive. If therefore the second Verb in English does not follow **THAT**, the construction must be changed thus:

CHANGE	INTO	
We deny HIS HAVING BEEN here	We deny THAT HE HAS BEEN here	Nous nions qu'il ait été ici
It is not fair FOR HER TO SAY that	It is not fair THAT SHE SAYS that	Il n'est pas juste qu'elle dise cela
I prefer YOU NOT TO WAIT	I prefer THAT YOU DO NOT WAIT	Je préfère que vous n'attendiez pas

Vouloir and **falloir** are the principal Verbs after which the Subjunctive MUST be used unless an Infinitive can be substituted. This can always be done when the **SUBJECT** in both sentences would be **THE SAME**. Thus : I am sorry I am late, *Je regrette d'être (=to be) en retard* ; BUT : I am sorry YOU are (=that you be) late, *Je regrette que vous soyez en retard*.

The Subjunctive generally denotes **DOUBT** ; when **CERTAINTY** is expressed, the Indicative should be employed.

APPENDIX (for reference only).

IRREGULAR PLURALS & FEMININES (see also page 118).

The following NOUNS ending in **al** take **s** in the Plural :

- bal** (dancing ball) ; carnaval, carnival ; chacal, jackal ;
nopal (a flower) ; régat, treat ; serval, tiger-cat

The following NOUNS ending in **ou** add **x** :

- bijou**, jewel ; caillou, flint ; chou, cabbage ; genou, knee ;
hibou, owl ; joujou, plaything ; pou, louse.

The following NOUNS ending in **ail** change **ail** into **aux** :

- baïl, lease ; corail, coral ; émail, enamel ; soupirail, loophole ; ventail, folding-door ; travail, labour, work ; travail (trave) is regular.

The Plur. of ail garlic, is **aulx** or **aïls** ; the Plur. of bétail cattle, is **bestiaux**.

aïeul, ancestor	aïeux, ancestors, or aïeuls, grandfathers
ciel, heaven	cieux, heavens „ ciels, skies of pictures, or bedtesters
œil, eye	yeux, eyes „ œils-de-bœuf, oval windows

The following ADJECTIVES have irregular Feminine forms :

absous	absolved	absoute	hébreu	Hebrew	hébraïque
bas	low	basse	jumeau	twin	jumelle
beau*	fine	belle	long	long	longue
bénin	benign	bénigne	malin	malicious	maligne
blanc	white	blanche	mou*	soft	molle
bon	good	bonne	muet	dumb	muette
caduc	decrepid	caduque	muscat	muscatel	muscade
col	quiet	coite	nouveau*	new	nouvelle
dissous	dissolved	dissoute	nul	no	nulle
doux	sweet	douce	oblong	oblong	oblongue
épais	thick	épaisse	préfix	prefixed	préfixe
exprès	express	expresse	public	public	publique
faux	false	fausse	roux	red	rousse
favori	favorite	favorite	sec	dry	sèche
fou*	foolish	folle	sot	stupid	sotte
frais	fresh	fraîche	sujet	subject	sujette
franc	free	française	tiers	third	tierce
gentil	genteel	gentille	traître	treacherous	traîtresse
gras	fat	grasse	turc	Turkish	turque
grec	Greek	grecque	vieux*	old	vieille
gros	big	grosse	violet	violet	violette

* Before a Masculine Noun commencing with a VOWEL or an H mute, **bel**, **fol**, **mol**, **nouvel**, **viell**, are used instead of **beau**, **nouveau**, etc.

The following ADJECTIVES in **al** take **s** in the Plural :

bancal, fatal, final, glacial, initial, jovial, labial, matinal, naval, pascal.

In most Grammars, this list is lengthened by inserting Adjectives NEVER USED IN THE PLURAL ! This once more proves that the writers simply copy each other, without attempting to simplify or improve the Rules.

COMPLETE CONJUGATIONS OF THE REGULAR AND AUXILIARY VERBS.

FOR REFERENCE ONLY.

1. INFINITIVE.				
to speak parler	to sell vendre	to finish finir	to have avoir	to be être
speaking parlant	selling vendant	finishing finissant	having ayant	being étant
spoken parlé	sold vendu	finished fini	had eu	been été
2. PRESENT PARTICIPLE.				
je parle	je vends	je finis	j'ai	je suis
tu parles	tu vends	tu finis	tu as	tu es
il parle	il vend	il finit	il a	il est
nous parlons	nous vendons	nous finissons	nous avons	nous sommes
vous parlez	vous vendez	vous finissez	vous avez	vous êtes
ils parlent	ils vendent	ils finissent	ils ont	ils sont
I speak, etc.	I sell, etc.	I finish, etc.	I have, etc.	I am, etc.
3. PAST PARTICIPLE.				
spoken parlé	sold vendu	finished fini	had eu	been été
4. PRESENT INDICATIVE.				
je parle	je vends	je finis	j'ai	je suis
tu parles	tu vends	tu finis	tu as	tu es
il parle	il vend	il finit	il a	il est
nous parlons	nous vendons	nous finissons	nous avons	nous sommes
vous parlez	vous vendez	vous finissez	vous avez	vous êtes
ils parlent	ils vendent	ils finissent	ils ont	ils sont
I speak, etc.	I sell, etc.	I finish, etc.	I have, etc.	I am, etc.
5. IMPERFECT or PAST.				
je parlais	je vendais	je finissais	j'avais	j'étais
tu parlais	tu vendais	tu finissais	tu avais	tu étais
il parlait	il vendait	il finissait	il avait	il était
nous parlions	nous vendions	nous finissions	nous avions	nous étions
vous parliez	vous vendiez	vous finissiez	vous aviez	vous étiez
ils parlaient	ils vendaient	ils finissaient	ils avaient	ils étaient
I was speaking.	I was selling.	I was finishing.	I had, etc.	I was, etc.
6. PAST DEFINITE.				
je parlai	je vendis	je finis	j'eus	je fus
tu parlais	tu vendis	tu finis	tu eus	tu fus
il parla	il vendit	il finit	il eut	il fut
nous parlâmes	nous vendîmes	nous finîmes	nous eûmes	nous fûmes
vous parlâtes	vous vendîtes	vous finîtes	vous eûtes	vous fûtes
ils parlèrent	ils vendirent	ils finirent	ils eurent	ils furent
I spoke, etc.	I sold, etc.	I finished, etc.	I had, etc.	I was, etc.

7. FUTURE.			
je parlerai	je vendrai	je finirai	je serai
tu parleras	tu vendras	tu finiras	tu seras
il parlera	il vendra	il finira	il sera
nous parlerons	nous vendrons	nous finirons	nous serons
vous parlerez	vous vendrez	vous finirez	vous serez
ils parleront	ils vendront	ils finiront	ils seront
I shall speak	I shall sell	I shall finish	I shall be
je parlerais	je vendrais	je finirais	je serais
tu parlerais	tu vendrais	tu finirais	tu serais
il parlerait	il vendrait	il finirait	il serait
nous parlerions	nous vendrions	nous finirions	nous serions
vous parleriez	vous vendriez	vous finiriez	vous seriez
ils parleraient	ils vendraient	ils finiraient	ils seraient
I should speak	I should sell	I should finish	I should be
speak (thou), parle	sell (thou), vends	finish (thou), finis	be (thou), sois
qu'il parle	let him sell, qu'il vende	qu'il finisse	let him be, qu'il soit
let us speak, parlons	let us sell, vendons	let us finish, finissons	let us be, soyons
speak, parlez	sell, vendez	finish, finissez	be, soyez
qu'ils parlent	qu'ils vendent	qu'ils finissent	qu'ils soient
je parle	je vende	je finisse	je sois
tu parles	tu vendes	tu finisses	tu sois
il parle	il vende	il finisse	il soit
nous parlions	nous vendions	nous finissions	nous soyons
vous parliez	vous vendiez	vous finissiez	vous soyez
ils parlaient	ils vendaient	ils finissent	ils soient
I may speak	I may sell	I may finish	I may be
je parlasse	je vendisse	je finisse	je fusse
tu parlasses	tu vendisses	tu finisses	tu fusses
il parlât	il vendît	il finît	il fût
nous parlussions	nous vendissions	nous finissions	nous fussions
vous parlassiez	vous vendissiez	vous finissiez	vous fussiez
ils parlaissent	ils vendissent	ils finissent	ils fussent
I might speak	I might sell	I might finish	I might be
11. PAST OR IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE.—QUE is usually prefixed in conjugating.			
10. PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE.—QUE (that) is usually prefixed in conjugating the Subjunctive.			
je parle	je vende	je finisse	je sois
tu parles	tu vendes	tu finisses	tu sois
il parle	il vende	il finisse	il soit
nous parlions	nous vendions	nous finissions	nous soyons
vous parliez	vous vendiez	vous finissiez	vous soyez
ils parlaient	ils vendaient	ils finissent	ils soient
I may speak	I may sell	I may finish	I may be
je parlasse	je vendisse	je finisse	je fusse
tu parlasses	tu vendisses	tu finisses	tu fusses
il parlât	il vendît	il finît	il fût
nous parlussions	nous vendissions	nous finissions	nous fussions
vous parlassiez	vous vendissiez	vous finissiez	vous fussiez
ils parlaissent	ils vendissent	ils finissent	ils fussent
I might speak	I might sell	I might finish	I might be

NOUNS and ADJECTIVES ending in **eur** (derived from a Present Participle) change into **euse** ; as,

danseur, dancer, danseuse | menteur, liar, menteuse

(the only exceptions are seven seldom used words)

Those in **teur** change into **trice** ; as,

acteur, actor, actrice | inventeur, inventor, inventrice

(except : chanteur, singer, chanteuse ; and a few seldom used words)

majeur, meilleur, mineur and those ending in **érieur** add **e**.

supérieur, superior, supérieure | extérieur, exterior, extérieure

Adjectives ending in **gu** take a diæresis over the **e**, to show that the **u** is pronounced, thus : aigu, acute, aiguë ; (**aigue** would be pronounced : aig).

In **COMPOUND NOUNS**, both parts are made Plural except in the following cases :

(1) No change is made if the Compound is formed from a Verb and Adverb, as : passe-partout, latch-key and latch-keys.

(2) Only the Noun changes if formed with Noun and Verb, or Noun and Preposition : passe-port, passport, passe-ports ; sous-officier, sub-officer, sous-officiers. porte-monnaie, purse, does not change in the Plural.

(3) Only the first Noun changes if the parts are joined by a Preposition. chemin de fer, railway, chemins de fer ; hôtel de ville, town hall, hôtels de ville

EXCEPTIONS : Monsieur, Messieurs ; Madame, Mesdames ; Mademoiselle, Mesdemoiselles ; Monseigneur, Messieurs ; gentilhomme, gentilshommes

ADVERBS are formed from Adjectives ending in **ant** or **ent** by changing the termination **nt** to **ment** ; as,

constant, constantly, constamment | prudent, prudently, prudemment

Two exceptions : lent, slowly, lentement ; présent, presently, présentement

The following **ADVERBS** take an acute accent over the **e** preceding **ment** :

aveugle	blindly	aveuglément	immense	immensely	immensément
commun	commonly	communément	impuni	with impunity	impunément
conforme	conformably	conformément	obscur	darkly	obscurément
confus	confusedly	confusément	opiniâtre	obstinately	opiniâtrement
diffus	diffusely	diffusément	précis	precisely	précisément
énorme	enormously	énormément	profond	deeply	profondément
exprès	expressly	expressément	uniforme	uniformly	uniformément

beau, fou, mou, nouveau form the **ADVERB** from their Feminine :

bellement, follement, mollement, nouvellement

gentil, nicely, gentiment, is quite irregular.

LIST OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS (for reference only).

The Verbs can be conjugated in full from the following table (see our Rules on the formation of Tenses, pages 74, 93, 106, 108, 110, 111).

This List does not include all the Compound Verbs conjugated like those from which they are derived, or the sixteen seldom used Defective Verbs given in a separate list in HUGO'S FRENCH VERBS SIMPLIFIED.

All Verbs ending in **indre** are conjugated like **craindre** (Par. 144).

INFINITIVE.	PRES. PARTIC.	PAST PARTIC.	PRESENT.	PAST DEF.
absoudre, to absolve	absolvant	absous (absoute, f.)	absous	(not used)
acquérir,* to acquire	acquérant	acquis	acquièrent†	acquis
aller,** to go (see Paragraph 118)				
assaillir, to assail *	assaillant	assailli	assaille	assaillis
s'asseoir,* to sit down	s'asseyant	assis	assieds, assois	assis
battre, to beat (regular except PRESENT SING., which is : bats, bats, bat)				
bénir, to bless		béni or bénit (otherwise regular)		
boire, to drink (see Par. 105)				
bouillir, to boil	bouillant	bouilli	bous	bouillis
conclure, to conclude	concluant	conclu	conclus	conclus
conduire, to conduct	conduisant	conduit	conduis	conduisis
confire, to preserve	confisant	confit	confis	confis
connaître, to know	connaissant	connu	connais	connus
contredire, to contradict (Par. 89)				
coudre, to sew	cousant	cousu	couds	cousis
courir,** to run (124)				
couvrir, to cover (135)				
craindre, to fear (144)				
croire, to believe	croyant	cru	crois	crus
croître, to grow	croissant	crû	crois	crûs
cueillir,* to gather	cueillant	cueilli	cueille	cueillis
cuire, to cook (conjugated like 'conduire')				
déchoir,* to decay	(not used)	déchu	déchois	déchus
devoir,** to owe (102)				
dire, to say, tell (88)				
dormir, to sleep (131)				
échoir,* to fall due	échéant	échu	il échoit	il échut
écrire, to write (84)				
envoyer,** to send (94)				
exclure, to exclude (conjugated like 'conclure')				
faire,** to do, make (99)				
falloir,** to be necessary (153)				
fuir, to run away	fuyant	fui	fuis	fuis
haïr, to hate	haïssant	haï	haïs, haïssons	{ haïs haïmes
instruire, to instruct (conjugated like 'conduire')				
lire, to read (81)				
maudire, to curse (89)				
mentir, to tell lies (131)				
mettre, to put (141)				

INFINITIVE.	PRES. PARTIC.	PAST PARTIC.	PRESENT.	PAST DEF.
moudre, to grind	moulant	moulu	mouds	moulus
mourir,* to die	mourant	mort	meurs†	mourus
mouvoir,* to move	mouvant	mu	meus†	mus
naître, to be born	naissant	né	nais	naquis
nuire, to hurt	nuisant	nui	nuis	nuisis
offrir, to offer (135)				
ouvrir, to open (135)				
paraître, to appear (conjugated like 'connaître')				
partir, to start (131)				
plaire, to please	plaisant	plu	plais	plus
pleuvoir,* to rain	pleuvant	plu	il pleut	il plut
pourvoir, to provide	pourvoyant	pourvu	pourvois	pourvus
pouvoir,** to be able (109)				
prendre, to take (90)				
prévaloir,** to prevail (like 'valoir,' except that it is regular in Subjunctive)				
prévoir, to foresee	prévoyant	prévu	prévois	prévis
recevoir,** to receive (101)				
repaitre, to feed (conjugated like 'connaître')				
se repentir, to repent (conjugated like 'mentir,' Paragraph 131)				
résoudre, to resolve	résolvant	résolu or résous ; résous		résolus
rire, to laugh (126)				
rompre, to break (regular except 3rd PERS. PRES. SING., which is 'rompt')				
sailir, to project (conjugated like 'assaillir,' but only used in Third Person)				
savoir,** to know (112)				
sentir, to feel (131)				
servir, to serve (131)				
sortir, to go out (131)				
souffrir, to suffer (135)				
suffire, to suffice (126)				
suivre, to follow (126)				
se taire, to be silent (conjugated like 'plaître')				
tenir,** to hold (114)				
traire, to milk	trayant	trait	trais	(not used)
tressaillir, to startle (conjugated like 'assaillir')				
vaincre, to conquer	vainquant	vaincu	vaincs†	vainquis
valoir,* to be worth	valant	valu ; vaux, vaux, vaut ; valus		
venir,** to come (115)				
vêtir, to clothe	vêtant	vêtu	vêts	vêtis
vivre, to live	vivant	vécu	vis	vécus
voir,** to see (77)				
vouloir,** to be willing (107)				

* These Verbs are irregular in the Future Stem, thus : j'acquerrai, je m'assièrai, je cueillerai, je décherrai, il écherra, je mourrai, je mourrai, il pleuvra, je vaudrai.

** Future Stem irregular,—see Grammar.

† acquiers, acquiers, acquiert ; acquérons, acquérez, acquièrent.
 † meurs, meurs, meurt ; mourons, mourez, meurent.
 † meus, meus, meut ; mouvons, mouvez, meuvent.
 † vaincs, vaincs, vainc ; vainquons, vainquez, vainquent.

VOCABULARY OF WORDS

occurring more than once in the Exercises.

The Numbers indicate the Paragraphs in which the full Conjugations of Irregular Verbs, and the various ways of translating PRONOUNS, etc., are given.

For the Numbers, Days and Months, see pages 27 to 55.

A, *à*, 1
to be able to, 109
about to, 118
absent, *absent*
to accept, *accepter*
to accompany, *accompagner*
account, *compte*, m.
active, *actif*
to add, *ajouter*
address, *adresse*, f.
to admit, 141
after, *après*
afternoon, *après-midi*, f.
all, *tout* (106)
to allow to, *laisser*
almost, *presque*
alone, *seul*
already, *déjà*
although, 155
always, *toujours*
to amuse, *amuser*
and, *et*
animal, *animal*, m.
answer, *réponse*, f.
any, 26, 27, 29, 54, 103
anything, *quelque chose*
108
to apologize, *s'excuser*
apple, *pomme*, f.
are, 15, 31
arm, *bras*, m.
to arrive, *arriver*
as...as, 56
as much, as many, 93
as soon as, *aussitôt que*
to ask, *demander*
at, 22, 25, 133
at once, *tout de suite*
aunt, *tante*, f.

BAD, *mauvais*
badly, *mal*
bag, *sac*, m.
basket, *panier*, m.
to be, 15, *se porter* (127)
beautiful, 53, 117
because, *parce que*
to become, 115
been, *été*
beer, *bière*, f.
before, 139, 155
to begin, *commencer*
to belong, 114
best, better, 56, 146
big, *gros*, *grosse*
bill, *compte*, m.
bird, *oiseau*, m.
black, *noir*
blue, *bleu*, *bleus*
book, *livre*, m.
boot, *bottine*, f.
bottle, *bouteille*, f.
box, *boîte*, f.
boy, *garçon*, m.
bread, *pain*, m.
to break, *briser*
to bring, *apporter*
brother, *frère*, m.
but, *mais*
butter, *beurre*, m.
to buy, *acheter*
by, *par*
TO CALL, *appeler*
can, 109
cane, *canne*, f.
carriage, *voiture*, f.
to carry, *porter*
cat, *chat*, m.
chair, *chaise*, f.
chamber, *chambre*, f.

cheese, *fromage*, m.
child, *enfant*, m. or f.
to choose, *choisir*
church, *église*, f.
cigar, *cigare*, m.
to close, *fermer*
coat, *habit*, m.
coffee, *café*, m.
color, *couleur*, f.
to come, 115
to come back, 115 [*cer*
to commence, *commen-*
to complain, *se plaindre*
concert, *concert*, m. [144
to contain, 114
to continue, *continuer*
to copy, *copier*
to correspond, *corres-*
to cost, *coûter* [*pondre*
could, 109
cousin, *cousin*, *cousine*
to cover, 135
cow, *vache*, f.
to cut, *couper*
TO DANCE, *danser*
daughter, *filles*, f.
day, *jour*, m.
dear, *cher*
debt, *dette*, f.
to descend, *descendre*
to desire, *désirer*
dictionary, *dictionnaire*
did, 21, 51, 99 [*masc.*
difficult, *difficile*
to dine, *dîner*
dinner, *dîner*, m.
to discover, 135
to dispute, *se disputer*
to do, 99
do, does, 32, 33, 51, 99

doctor, médecin, docteur	fork, fourchette, f.	horse, cheval, m.
dog, chien, m.	franc, franc, m.	hotel, hôtel, m.
done, fait	French, français	hour, heure, f.
door, porte, f.	Frenchman, Français	house, maison, f.
to doubt, douter	friend, ami, amie	how, comment
dress, robe, f.	from, de, 22, 25	how much, how many, 93
to dress, habiller	full, plein	husband, mari
to drink, 105	TO GAIN, gagner	I, je, 85
EACH, 100	garden, jardin, m.	idea, idée, f.
easy, facile	gas, gaz, m.	if, si
to eat, manger	gentleman, monsieur, m.	ill, malade
empty, vide	German, allemand	in, dans, en, 55, 133
end, fin, f.	Germany, Allemagne	to inform, informer
English, anglais	girl, fille, f.	ink, encre, f.
enough, 93	to give, donner	inkstand, encrier, m.
to enter, entrer	to give back, rendre	invitation, invitation, f.
envelope, enveloppe, f.	glass, verre, m.	to invite, inviter
evening, soir, m.	glove, gant, m.	it, 23, 42, 75, 103
ever, jamais	to go, 118	its, 9, 10
every, chaque, 100, 110	to go away, 131	JOURNAL, journal, m.
everybody, tout le monde	to go out, 131	to judge, juger
everything, tout	good, bon, bonne	TO KEEP, garder
examination, examen, m.	grammar, grammaire, f.	key, clef, f.
to exclaim, s'écrier	great, grand	kindly, veuillez
to expect, attendre	a great deal, beaucoup	king, roi, m.
expense, dépense, f.	gun, fusil, m.	knife, couteau, m.
TO FALL, tomber	HAD, eu, 65, 73	to knock, frapper
family, famille, f.	half, 147	to know, 112
fast, vite	hand, main, f.	LADY, dame, f.
father, père, m.	handsome, 53, 117	young lady, demoiselle, f.
to fear, 144	handwriting, écriture, f.	lamp, lampe, f.
feather, plume, f.	happy, heureux	large, grand
to feel, 131	hat, chapeau, m.	last, dernier [retard
to fetch, chercher	to have, 5	late = behind time, en
a few, quelques	he, il, 75, 85	to laugh, 126
to fight, se battre	to hear, entendre	to learn, 91
to fill, remplir	to help, aider	least, 146
to find, trouver	her, 9, 10, 42, 85	left, gauche
fine, 53, 117	hers, 38, 87	to lend, prêter
to finish, finir	herself, 119, 140	less, 93, 146
fire, feu, m., incendie, m.	here, ici	lesson, leçon, f.
first, premier	here is, here are, voici	let, 58, 151
at first, d'abord	to hide, cacher	to let, louer
fish, poisson, m.	high, haut	letter, lettre, f.
to flatter, flatter	him, 42, 85	to light, allumer
flower, fleur, f.	himself, 119, 140	to like, aimer
to follow, 126	his, 9, 10, 38, 87	list, liste, f.
foot, pied, m.	to hold, 114	to listen, écouter
for, pour	home, at home, 132	little, petit, 93
to forget, oublier	to hope, espérer	to live, demeurer

to look at, regarder	to offer, 135	probable, probable
to look for, chercher	officer, officier, m.	to promise, 141
to lose, perdre	often, souvent	to punish, punir
loud=high, haut	old, vieux, 53	purse, porte-monnaie, m.
TO MAKE, 99	to omit, 141	to put, 141
man, homme, m.	on, sur, 69	QUARREL, se disputer
many, 93	one, un, une, 80, 145	question, question, f.
market, marché, m.	only, 108, 154	TO READ, 81
match, allumette, f.	to open, 135	ready, prêt
mayor, maire, m.	opinion, opinion, f.	to receive, 101
me, 12, 76, 85	order, commande, f.	red, rouge
meat, viande, f.	ought to, 102	regiment, régiment, m.
to meet, rencontrer	our, 6 ; ours, 38, 87	to regret, regretter
mine, 38, 87	ourselves, 119, 140	to remain, rester
mistake, faute, f.	to owe, 102	to repeat, répéter
money, argent, m.	PAGE, page, f.	to reply, répondre
month, mois, m.	to paint, peindre, 144	to rest, se reposer
more, plus, 93	paper, papier, m.	to return, rendre
morning, matin, m.	parcel, paquet, m.	rich, riche
the most, le plus	to pass, passer	right, droit
mother, mère, f.	to pay (for), payer	ring, bague, f.
much, 93	pear, poire, f.	river, fleuve, m.
music, musique, f.	pen, plume, f.	room, chambre, f.
must, 102, 161	pencil, crayon, m.	round, rond
my, 9, 10	people, 145	to run, 124
myself, 119, 140	to permit, 141	SALAD, salade, f.
NAME, nom, m.	picture, tableau, m.	salt, sel, m.
nearly, presque	piece, pièce, f., mor-	same, même
to be necessary to, 153	pipe, pipe, f. [ceau, m.	sample, échantillon, m.
neighbour, voisin, —e	place, place, f.	satisfied, satisfait
neither, 108	plate, assiette, f.	to say, 88
nephew, neveu, m.	to play, jouer	school, école, f.
never, 108	if you please, s'il vous	to seal, cacheter, 134
new, nouveau, 53	plaît	to see, 77
newspaper, journal, m.	pleasure, plaisir, m.	to seek, chercher
next, prochain	polite, poli	to sell, vendre
nice, joli	pony, poney, m.	to send, 94
niece, nièce, f.	poor, pauvre	to send back, 94
no, non, 28	position, position, f.	serious, sérieux
no more, 108	possible, possible	servant, domestique, m.f.
nobody, 108	post, poste, f.	to serve, 131
noise, bruit, m.	postage-stamp, timbre-	several, plusieurs
nose, nez, m.	poste, m.	shall, 57, 102, 122
not, 11, 19	postman, facteur, m.	she, elle, 75, 85
note, note, f.	pound, livre, f.	shilling, schelling, m.
nothing, 108	to praise, louer	ship, vaisseau, m.
TO OBEY, obéir	present, cadeau, m.	shoe, soulier, m.
o'clock, heure(s), f.	present, présent	shop, boutique, f.
of, 22, 25, 103	pretty, joli	short, court
of which, of whom, dont	price, prize, prix, m.	should, 61, 102, 122

to show, montrer	their, 6	waiter, garçon, m.
to shut, fermer	theirs, 38, 87	to walk, marcher
to sing, chanter	them, 42, 85, 103	to want to, 107
sister, sœur, f.	themselves, 119, 140	warm, chaud
to sleep, 131	there, là, 104	to warm, chauffer
small, petit	there is, there are, 137	was, 65, 73
to smoke, fumer	these, 13, 74, 78	to wash, laver
so...as, si...que	they, 24, 75, 85, 145	watch, montre, f.
so that, afin que	thine, 38, 87	water, eau, f.
soldier, soldat, m.	thing, chose, f.	way, chemin, m.
some, 26, 29, 54, 103, 111	to think, penser	we, nous, 145
something, quelque	this, 13, 70, 74, 78	to wear, porter
son, fils, m. [chose	those, 13, 74, 78	week, semaine, f.
song, chanson, f.	thou, tu	well, bien
soup, soupe, f.	to throw, jeter	were, 65, 73
Spaniard, Espagnol, m.	thy, 9, 10	what, 12, 34, 39, 59, 83,
to speak, parler	thysself, 119, 140	when, quand [143
to spell, épeler	ticket, billet, m.	where, où
to spend, dépenser	time, temps, m.	which, 12, 59, 60, 62, 67,
stamp, timbre-poste, m.	time (of day), heure, f.	who, 34, 62 [68
to start, partir, 131	tired, fatigué	whole, 106
station, gare, f., station, f.	to, à, 128, 129, 130, 133	whom, 34, 62, 67, 68
stick, canne, f.	to the, 22, 25	whose, 68, 142
story, histoire, f.	to it, to them, 104	why, pourquoi
street, rue, f.	to-day, aujourd'hui	wicked, méchant, 53
to strike, frapper	to-morrow, demain	wife, femme, f.
strong, fort	together, ensemble	will, 57, 107, 123
to study, étudier	too, trop, 93	to be willing to, 107
to succeed, réussir	town, ville, f.	to win, gagner
to suffer, 135	train, train, m.	window, fenêtre, f.
sugar, sucre, m.	tree, arbre, m.	wine, vin, m.
to suit, 115	trouble, peine, f.	to wish to, 107
sum, somme, f.	to try, essayer	with, avec
to surprise, 91	UGLY, villain	without, sans
TABLE, table, f.	umbrella, parapluie, m.	work, travail, m.
to take, 90	uncle, oncle, m.	to work, travailler
tall, grand	under, sous	workman, ouvrier
task, devoir, m.	to understand, 91	world, monde, m.
tea, thé, m.	to undertake, 91	worse, worst, 146
teacher, maître, m.	unless, à moins que	would, 61, 123
to tear, déchirer	until, 155	to write, 84
to tell, 88	upstairs, en haut	YEAR, an, m.
than, que, de (55)	us, to us, nous	yes, oui (page 23, note)
to thank, remercier	used to, 66	yesterday, hier
that, 13, 62, 70, 74, 78	useful, utile	yet, encore
that which, 83	VAIN, vain	you, to you, vous, 145
the, 2, 3, 4	very, très	young, jeune
the one, 80	to visit, visiter	
theatre, théâtre, m.	voice, voix, f.	
these, 42, 76, 85	TO WAIT (for), atten	

